

## INDEX

- Abokas*, hades, (Fate) II 118–20, 122, 296
- Abortions, deified, II 57
- Ahohololoa*, *Ahonoa*, etc., heaven, (Niue) II 87, 88–90, 92, 290
- Aitutaki (Hervey Islands): created by Te-erui, I 29, 67; discovery of, I 28–9; first settlers coming from Savai'i? I 29; meaning of name, I 29
- Akaanga (Hervey Islands): catching souls in net, II 16 (Mangaia), 25, 26 (Rarotonga); eating remains of souls, (Mangaia) II 19; and Muru, killing Tiki, (Rarotonga) II 150–1; probably servant of Muru, (Rarotonga) II 30
- Akarimea, (Aitutaki) I 268
- Akataura, (Mangaia) I 35, II 8
- Aldebaran: aiding Tane, (Hervey) I 133; a pillar of the sky, etc., (Society) I 121
- Alo'alo, son of the sun, (Samoa) I 109
- Amoshishiki, *see under* Futuna *under* Maui-tikitiki
- Anakura or Red Cave, (Mangaia) II, 3, 4, 5, 6, 11, 13, 14 *n.* 1, 18
- Ancestors: animals associated with, (Tikopia) II 111; deified, (Ongtong Java) I 311, II 112, 113
- Ancestral home in W., destination of souls: I 299–301, 317; (Bukabuka) II 294, 321, 324, (Hervey) I 299–300, II 323, (Marquesas) I 300–1, II 69–70, 71, 281, 283–4, 319, (Niue?) I 301, II 87, 291, (Samoa) I 299, 335, II 305, (Society) I 299, (Tonga) I 299, 346?, II 305, *see also* Tokelau, I 301, II 101, 292–3; to be associated with later migrants, I 302–3, II 217, 257, 259, 322, 338–40; on earth, beyond horizon, II 314–15; on earth, nearer than horizon or at or behind base of sky, II 261–2, 265, 305–6, 308–12; other cults confused with idea of, I 292, II 261–2, 263–5, 306–7; overland journeys of dead indicating idea of, I 293, II 261, 305; overland journeys towards N.W. suggestive of, (Society) I 382, II 273, 274–5; passage of souls to horizon connected with, II 317; regions not above or below earth to be associated with, II 322; souls associated with later home in N.E., (New Zealand) I 293 *n.* 1, 308–9; souls sometimes going to later homes in E. or S.E.? I 309–12; (Eromanga) I 311, II 123, (Manihiki) I 310–11 *cf.* 224, II 104, 294, 321, 324–5, (Marquesas) I 309–10, II 71, 283, (Ongtong Java) I 311, II 112–13, 114–15, 295; western destinations not necessarily connected with ancestral home, I 296–8 *and notes*, 311; *see also* *Havaiki* and *Po*
- Aneiteum (New Hebrides): fished up by Nungerrain, I 40; Matshikitshiki and, I 39–40
- Animals, etc.: entered by lingering souls, buried, (Fotuna) II 100, (Niue) II 92, (Samoa) I 198, 322–3, *see also* Paumotu, I 210, term *tupua*; possessing souls, I 200–1 (Samoa), 206 (Society); not possessing souls, I 206–7 (Hervey), 203 (Tonga); produced by agency of Raitubu, (Society) I 62; soul in form of insect, caught in priests' nets, (Bukabuka) II 105; souls of ancestors associated with, (Tikopia) II 111; souls of dead appearing in form of, (Hervey) II 21, *cf.* 32, (Marquesas) II 39, 43, 50, (Ongtong Java) II 114, (Paumotu) II 86, (Rotuma) II 94–5, (Samoa) I 321–2, 323, (Society) I 396–7, (Tonga) I 356; souls in hades turning into, (Fate) II 120, 121, (Nguna) II 123, *cf.* Marquesas, II 38, *and* Society, I 362, 370, 386, 394; *tu'uar* of soul of dead announcing deaths, (Rotuma) II 94
- Aniwa (New Hebrides), fished up by god, I 39–40
- Antares, pillar of sky, (Society) I 121
- Ants: figuring in myths, (Samoa) I 5; souls of common men feeding on, (Tonga) I 345, 351, II 270; on tree leading to sky, (Samoa) I 94
- Aoaomaraia introducing art of fire-making, (Society) II 192
- Arcturus, a pillar of the sky, (Society) I 121
- the *Areoi* (Marquesas): feasting in honour of Mahoui in spring, II 163–4, 173–4
- the *Areoi* (Society): going to paradise, I 360, 362, 363, 364, 369, 371, 375, 386, 389, 390, 392, II 272; low-class men serving, not going to paradise, I 390–1; primarily belonging to class of chiefs, I 390; societies of, founded by Oro, I 392; societies of, nature and grades, I 390–1; souls eaten by gods worshipped during life, I 370 *cf.* 385, II 141; wearing flowers from Mehani Mt., I 373; worshipping Oro, II 164 *n.* 2, 174

- Arihi and Tafa'i, (Paumotu) II 79–80, (Society) I 375, 381, 383
- Arooe*, the other world, (Society) I 372, 378–9
- Arrowroot plant, sky resting on, I 44 (Niue), cf. 41 (Samoa) and 45
- Assembly house of gods and dead (Society): in sun, *Tourooa-t'eraï*, I 367, 378, cf. 114; *Taviroua-l'orai*, paradise for chiefs and rich men, I 367, 378, 381, 383, 386; *Tourooa* of dark region, I 366, 393, 397; *Tourooa-t'eraï*, paradise for persons of rank, I 366; *Tourooa-t'eraï*, etc., and *Rohutu-noanoa*, I 380, 386, 392; *Tourooa-t'eraï* and *Taviroua-l'orai* the same, I 367, 378, 392–3; see also Reva's house (Bukabuka) II 105, 106, 142, and Tiki's house in *Avaiiki* (Rarotonga) I 267, II 27, 30–1, 127, 131, 167, 278
- Ata Is. (Tonga), origin, I 55, 56–7
- Atafu (Tokelau), drawn up by Lu, I 37
- Atalanga, Ataranga, see under Maui-atalanga, etc.
- Atanua, wife of Atea, (Marquesas) I 20, 21, 22, 68, II 175, 242
- Atea (Oatea, Vatea): god of later immigrants, and sky-god, II 257, 339; important in E. Pacific, I 22 n. 1; name meaning light, day, I 22 n. 1, 46–7; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 230, 235–7, 241–3; not worshipped by upper classes only, II 332
- , Vatea, Avatea (**Mangaia**): eldest son of great mother, I 12, II 8, 233–4; father of gods and men, I 12; fishing up Tongareva, I 38, 132–3; half man, half fish, I 12; living in *Avaiiki* below, I 12–13, 30, II 233–4; and Papa, parents of great gods, I 13–14, 80, cf. II 234–5; and Papa, representing sky and earth, I 30, 80; representing light, I 29–30, 75–6, 80; the same as Wakea of Hawai'i, etc., I 12, 29; slighting Tangaroa, II 234–5; sun and moon the eyes of, I 12, 13, 30, 115
- Atea, Oatea (**Marquesas**): ancestor-god begetting all things, I 68, II 242; ancestor of Tiki, II 174, 175; Atanua the wife of, I 20, 21, 22, 68, II 175, 242; first man to reach Marquesas, II 175; god of husbandry and rain, II 242; as the light of day, I 68, cf. 193; as light and sun, defeating Tangaroa, I 20–2, 75, II 235; and name of morning star, I 134, II 242; and separation of earth and sky, I 25–6, cf. 80, II 229; a sky-god, I 20–1; song in honour of, sung at time of human sacrifice, II 242; as substitute for Maui-tikitiki, II 229, 230, 236, 241, 242–3
- , Vatea, Oatea (**Paumotu**): creating the earth, etc., I 44, 68, II 229, 241, 242; creating sun, wind, etc.? I 151, II 242, see also I 69, Atea Tangaroa as creator; creating Tiki and Hina, I 68, 107, II 177; fighting and killed by Tane, I 15, 27, II 229; importance of Tane, Tangaroa and, II 236, 241, 242; name appearing as that of first king, (Mangareva) II 236, 242, 244; as substitute for Maui-gods, II 229, 230, 236–7, 242–3; superseded by Tangaroa, I 305, II 236, 242–3, 244; Tane and, separating sky from earth? I 15, 27–8; Tower of Babel myth *re*, I 94
- Atea (**Rarotonga**): as ancestor of the Maui-family, II 170; descended from Te Tumu, I 14
- , Vatea (**Tongareva**?): fishing up Tongareva, I 38; as substitute for Maui-tikitiki, II 230
- Atiu (Hervey): Mitiaro made with soil from, I 67; origin of name, I 66–7
- Atu-Moana, god (Mangareva), I 69
- Auraka chasm (Mangaia): burial-cave of the Ngariki group, II 9, 11, 13, 16–17; entrances for upper and lower classes, II 9; food for dead thrown down, I 267; girl of Tahitian tribe associated with Kauava opening, II 7, 17 n. 1; Kauava opening the easiest entrance to, II 9; situation of, II 9, 13; souls going to *bua* tree from, II 10, 16–18; souls from Kauava opening going to leaping-place, II 10; spirits of dead wandering near, II 19
- Auriga, or "Great Valley," (Society) I 121, 126
- Avaiiki*, see under *Havaiki*
- Babel, Tower of, myths, I 69, 94–5
- Bachelors, not admitted to heaven, II 99 (Fiji), 96 cf. 95, 98–9, 292 (Fotuna)
- Belly: seat of affections, I 206 (Hervey), 214 (Tikopia); seat of soul, I 209 (Marquesas), 210 (Paumotu); seat of thought or mind, I 209 (Marquesas), 210? (Paumotu), 204, 205 (Society)
- Birds: associated with the ancestors, (Tikopia) II 111; born of gods, (Easter) I 72; connected with origin of Rotuma, I 70; defeating the fish, (Samoa) I 5; frigate-bird taboo, (Rotuma) II 95; Maui assuming form of, (Mangaia) I 43, II 193, 194, 205, (Marquesas) II 196, 205, see also Society, II 192; months etc. named in connection with, I 176 (Paumotu), 155, 156 (Samoa); Pena turning into bird and killing friend, (Society) I 359–60; souls of common people eaten by bird, (Tonga)

## INDEX

343

Birds (*cont.*)

I 345, 351, 386, II 140, 270; souls of dead appearing as, (Mangaia) II 21, (Marquesas) II 39, (Ongtong Java) II 114, (Paumotu) II 86, (Samoa) I 322, 323, (Tonga) I 356; souls destined for hell escaping in bodies of, (Paumotu) II 72, 79, 86, 142, 286, 288; souls eaten by bird united to deity, (Society) I 367–8, 385, II 141; souls in form of, caught in priests' nets, (Bukabuka) II 104–5; souls of priests going to heaven in form of, (Marquesas) II 39, 52, 62, 67, 79; spirit in form of, waiting to eat soul of dying, (Paumotu) II 85; Tangaroa as bird, (Society) I 63, II 166; *tuli* or snipe, *see Tuli*; worshipped by sick man, appearing before and after death, (Society) I 396

Birth: of chief, omen of, (Society) I 127; of first-born, (Society) I 127; miraculous conception, (Marquesas) I 208, II 44, (Society) I 62–3, (Tonga) II 163; taboo days at time of, (Society) I 258, 261, 262, 264–5; Tane prayed to on occasion of, (Paumotu) II 241; women dying in child-bed going to heaven, (Marquesas) II 43, 57, 129, 130

Bowels: death caused by the *ti'i* eating entrails of living, (Society) I 395–6; emotions associated with, I 209 (Marquesas), 205 (Society), 202 (Tonga); Maui trying to inoculate own entrails with immortality of Tiki's, (Paumotu) I 210, II 144, 152; mind and courage associated with, (Society) I 205; as the seat of the mind, (Hervey) I 206; as the seat of the soul, and ideas as to excrements, II 143–4

Brain, seat of memory, (Tonga) I 203

Buataranga, *see under* Mangaia *under* Maui-atalanga

Bukabuka, origin of, I 18, 72

*Bulotu*, *see under* Tonga, Heaven *under* Heaven and Hell

Burial: burial-place kept secret, (Society) I 373–4; in caves, *see under* Caves; of common people, (Easter) II 109, (Fotuna) II 95, (Society) I 251; of a *makua*, (Ongtong Java) I 284; practised, (Easter) II 108, (Mangaia) I 265; not practised for upper classes, (Marquesas) I 271

Burial huts, etc., (Easter) II 109, (Mangaia) II 5, 7, (Niue) II 153, (Society) I 251, 253

Butterfly, chief's soul departing in form of, (Easter) II 109

Californian tribes, souls going west, I 296–7 *notes*

Calla Filatonga, wind-goddess, (Tonga) I 146

Canis Minor, Procyon a pillar of the sky, (Society) I 121

Cannibalism: cannibal rites celebrated at temple, (Marquesas) II 174; eating enemy to prevent posthumous vengeance, (Marquesas) II 45; escape from cannibal grandfather, (New Hebrides) I 95; Maui-tikitiki liberating captives of cannibal gods, (New Hebrides) II 183, cf. 209; in *Pakasia*, (Fate) II 121; Tane devouring men, (Society) I 374; Tangaroa devouring men, (Samoa) I 98, 101, 106; Tapuitea or Venus eating men, (Samoa) I 128–9; *Ti'iti'i* eating Fe'e, (Samoa) II 157; victims eaten raw, (Marquesas) II 41, 65; woman associated with moon a cannibal, (Paumotu) I 103; *see also* gods eating sun, etc., *under* Eclipses

Canoe or canoe-shaped coffins: (Mangaia) I 270–1, (Marquesas) I 274–5, 300, II 43, 48–9, (Paumotu?) I 277, (Samoa) I 246–7, (Tonga) I 250–1; carrying soul to destination, I 238; dead set adrift in canoes, I 279 (Niue), 247 (Samoa); effigies of dead, etc., in canoe at *marae*, (Marquesas) I 274, II 40, cf. 49

Canoes: importance of names of masts, (Hervey) I 28–9; living setting out in, for paradise in west, (Marquesas) II 43, 63, 70, 284; living setting out in, for *Vevao*, (Marquesas) II 41, 54, 63; sickness and war brought by spirit-ship, (Samoa) I 333; sins and sickness sent to sea in canoe, (Society) I 255, 256, 269, cf. Aitutaki, I 268, 269, 270, 271, New Hebrides, I 287, and Tikopia, I 284; souls reaching destination by means of, (Marquesas) I 300–1, II 41, 43, 48–9, 52, 53, 56, 63–4, 69–70, 281, 283, 284; souls sailing west to *Avaiiki* in? (Rarotonga) II 26, 279; souls of *tu'u*-class sailing east in? (Ongtong Java) II 112–13, 114–15, 275, cf. I 311; spirit-canoe bearing soul to destination, (Mangaia) II 5, 6, 7, 15; spirit-canoe *Mahina*, for souls of dead, (Paumotu) II 82–4, 286, 288, 289; spirit-canoe taking soul to *Pulotu*, (Samoa) I 333, II 268, (Tonga) I 344, II 270; spirits of dead pursuing souls in canoes, (Paumotu) II 81, 286, 288; use of, prohibited on certain occasions, (Society) I 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262

Canopus, (Society) I 121

Capella, (Society) I 121

Capricornus, (Society) I 121

- Castor and Pollux:** birth of, (Society) I 120–1; constellation known, (Society) I 125, 126; names for, I 136 (Fotuna), 130 (Samoa), 121, 124–5 (Society); twin children fleeing to sky and becoming stars, (Society) I 125, *see also* Hervey, I 133; two men originally, (Samoa) I 130
- Caves:** Auraka chasm (Mangaia), *see that title*; burial in, (Mangaia) I 265, II 3, (Paumotu) I 275, (Society) I 373; burial caves having entrances for upper and lower classes, (Mangaia) II 9; caverns, etc. associated with hades, *see under* Volcano-cult; different burial-caves for different groups, (Mangaia) II 9; in E., gathering-places for souls of newly dead, (Mangaia) II 3, 4, 5, 6, 11, 13, 14, 18; in E., resorts of different groups of souls, (Mangaia) II 3, 13, 14, 18; in E., Veetini visiting caves of both groups, (Mangaia) II 5, 14 *n.* 1; food thrown to dead down, (Mangaia) I 267; of Karangaiti and Kauava (Mangaia), *see those titles*; Maui-tikitiki confined in, etc., (Rarotonga) I 43, II 168, 209; Raupa burial-chasm, (Mangaia) I 220–1, II 9, 11, 13; Ti'iti'i dying in cave, (Samoa) I 146, *cf.* 330, *see also* Society, I 362, II 251, 273, 274; winds confined in, I 151 (Niue), 142 (Society)
- Centipedes:** soul of dead given bowl of, (Aitutaki) II 33; on tree leading to sky, (Samoa) I 94
- Chaos,** period of darkness, space, and, I 73–5; 23, 74 (Hawai'i), 20, 74–5 (Marquesas), 49, 50, 73–4 (Samoa), 11, 19, 30, 59, 74 (Society)
- Charms,** worn to ward off consequences of dreams, (Rotuma) I 223
- Chiefs:** deification of, I 337 (Samoa), 344–5 (Tonga), *see also* Society, I 371, prayers of priests enabling kings' souls to become gods; deification of priests and, (Marquesas) II 39, 49, 52, 68; descent from gods, I 316; knowledge of stars, I 140 (Rotuma), 139 (Samoa), 126, 133 (Society), 140 (Tokelau); language of, pigeons addressed in, (Samoa) I 200, 201; as navigators, I 140 (Ellice), 138 (Society); and perpetual fires, I 237–8; (Samoa) I 242–3; physical difference between lower classes and, II 329–30; souls of upper classes going to heaven, *see under* Rank and the after-life; stream sacred to priests and kings, (Mangaia) II 4; term for, and name for Pleiades, (Samoa) I 131
- Chieftainship:** developed in Polynesia, II 303, 304; kava people connected with institution of, (Melanesia) II 299–300; undeveloped among dual people, *see under* Dual people
- Clan or family:** family groups in spirit-world, (Ellice) II 102, 293, *see also* Bukabuka, II 107; liable to suffer for fault of individual, I 230; only souls of Sara's clan free to enter *Abokas*, (Fate) II 118–19, 122–3
- Cloth-making:** associated with Ina (Hina, Sina), I 102 (Hervey), 100 (Samoa), 99, 114 (Society), *see also* Niue, I 104; taboo on certain occasions, (Society) I 258, 261, 262; woman in moon beating cloth, (Tonga) I 102
- Clouds:** the cloth of Ina bleaching, (Mangaia) I 102; in the cosmic myths, I 3, 4, 8, 51, 85, 86–7, 145 (Samoa), 61, 62, 99 (Society); derived from Atea, (Marquesas) I 68, II 242; eclipses caused by, (Tonga) I 114; as “shavings” of the sky, (Paumotu) I 27; sky reached by means of, (Marquesas) II 41, 63, 67, 281; souls of warriors assuming forms of, (Mangaia) II 20, 21 and *n.* 5; as stone terraces of Hina, (Marquesas) I 91–2, 93, 103
- Cockroaches:** souls turning into, (Society) I 362, 370, 380, 386, 394; on tree leading to sky, (Samoa) I 94
- Coconut:** coconut husks at funeral ceremony, (Ongtong Java) I 284; derived from head of Tuna, (Paumotu) II 178; leaves of, as taboo marks, (Rotuma) I 70; Lu drawing up islands by roots of, (Tokelau) I 37; nuts and food offered to dead, I 266–7 (Mangaia), 272 (Marquesas); nuts restoring sight to blind woman, II 205; (Niue) II 88, 91, 254, (Paumotu) II 80, 81, 91, (Society) I 375, II 91, *see also* Rakahanga, II 200–1 and Tokelau, II 199; Sina reaching sky by climbing, (Samoa) I 94; “sins” blown through, (Aitutaki) I 268, 270
- Coffins,** *see* Canoe or canoe-shaped coffins
- Columba, Phaet** a pillar of sky, (Society) I 121
- Comets:** children of Rua-tupua, (Society) I 120–1, 127; names for, I 132 (Samoa), 127 (Society); presaging death or war, (Samoa) I 113, 132; not presaging evil, (Society) I 127; as tails of gods, (Society) I 127
- Compass,** points of, *see* Points of compass and winds
- Conch shell:** blown at funeral of *tuitonga*, (Tonga) I 249; trumpets blown in honour of Pleiades, (Manihiki) I 180

## INDEX

345

- Coral: figuring in cosmic myths, (Samoa) I 5, 50; the god Moso derived from, (Samoa) I 17; origin of, (Marquesas) I 68; "prophesying coral" and Tingilau, (Samoa) I 332
- Coral tree, souls departing at time of flowering of, (Mangaia) II 7, 18, 19–20
- Corpse: of chief carried round by warriors, (Samoa) I 240–1, cf. Society, I 259; exposed on trestle, etc., I 283 (Easter), 284 (Ongtong Java), 251, 252, 265, 368 (Society); head turned towards east, (Samoa) I 241; preservation of, *see under* Embalming; red feathers tied to, to prevent eating of soul, (Society) I 376; removal of tattooed skin from, (Marquesas) II 42, 64, cf. New Hebrides, II 119, 122–3; sneezing in presence of, (Fiji) I 225, 230; struck, to expel evil spirits, (Paumotu) I 277; widow lying beside, etc., I 272 (Marquesas), 252 (Society), 281 (Tongareva); wrapped in cloth, I 275 (Paumotu), 246, 247 (Samoa), 265 (Society), 250 (Tonga)
- Corvus, stars of, (Society) I 121
- Council-meetings: gods communicating with orator "sleeping" at? (Samoa) I 216; of Tangaroa in heaven, (Samoa) I 52, 88
- Courage, seat of: the bowels, (Society) I 205; the liver, I 206 (Hervey), 203 (Tonga)
- Crabs: land-crabs and the *palolo*, (Samoa) I 162, 163; and months, (Hervey) I 172, 173; origin of, (Marquesas) I 68
- Crickets: chirping of, omen soul not in paradise, (Rarotonga) II 27, cf. 32; cricket-god directing path of soul, (Mangaia) II 6; hour after sunset named after, (Samoa) I 186; souls of dead appearing in, (Marquesas) II 39
- Curses: of gods, causing death, (Society) I 253, 360; sneezing associated with, (Melanesia) I 224, 225, 228; of Tangaroa and Tu, causing death, (Society) I 65–6, II 149; wishing man to sink in sea with setting sun, a curse, (Samoa) I 113, cf. 328 and 332–3
- Cuttle-fish: associated with water, (Samoa) II 158–9; children of, fighting children of fire, (Samoa) I 7, 85; fighting fire, etc., (Samoa) I 4, 6, 85; fighting fire and rocks, and conflict between cults of Fe'e and Maui, (Samoa) II 158–60, 249; fire the ancestor of, (Samoa) I 4, 85; high-flaring fire the son of, (Samoa) I 7; pinning sky to earth, slain by Maui, (Ra'iatea) I 42; *see also* Fe'e
- Dancing: and acting, by the *areoi*, (Society) I 390; lascivious, at funeral of chief, (Marquesas) I 272; Rongo and Tane patrons of, (Hervey) I 191
- Day and Night: caused by demons swallowing moon or sun, (Society) I 114; composing the two parts of the world, (Paumotu) II 73, 76; day derived from Atea, (Marquesas) I 68, II 242; day on earth, night in *Avaiki*, (Mangaia) I 115 cf. II 15; lengthening the day by retarding the sun, I 110–12; lengthening the night to procure sleep, (New Hebrides) I 112–13; names for different periods of, I 194 (Fotuna), 192 (Hervey), 192–3 (Marquesas), 193 (Niue), 193 (Paumotu), 186 (Samoa), 190–1 (Society), 187 (Tonga); night born of Tane and Tangaroa, (Tahiti) I 63; no going out at night, I 321 (Samoa), 356 (Tonga); origin of, I 15 (Paumotu), 3, 52, 85, 88 (Samoa); producing sun, moon, etc., (Samoa) I 52; time at night told by stars, (Society) I 191; time reckoned by nights and not by days, I 194 (Fotuna), 192 (Hervey), 192 (Marquesas), 190 (Society); time reckoned by tides as well as by sun, (Society) I 190
- Days of the Month: children of months, (Tahiti) I 61, 170; the *Korekore* days, I 195–6; 194–5 (Easter), 191 (Hervey), 192 (Marquesas), 193 (Paumotu), 187, 189 (Society); named, I 182; 194 (Easter), 191 (Hervey), 192 (Marquesas), 193 (Paumotu), 183, 184, 185, 187–90 (Society); named after gods, (Hervey) I 191, (Marquesas) I 192? (Paumotu) I 193, II 242, (Society) I 187–90; names known to fishermen, (Marquesas) I 140; nights favourable for fishing, (Marquesas) I 192; nights favourable for fishing and procuring victims, (Hervey) I 192; nights favourable for thieving, I 191 (Hervey), 190, 191 *n.* 4, 395 (Society); number of, in different groups, I 182, 184–5, 191, 192, 193, 194; and phases of the moon, I 194 (Easter), 194 (Fotuna), 191–2 (Hervey), 192 (Marquesas), 186 (Tonga); system of intercalation? I 193–4 (Rotuma), 183–6 (Society); thirtieth day unnamed? (Society) I 185, cf. 184
- Death: bird etc. worshipped by sick man as omen of, (Society) I 396, cf. Rotuma, II 94; born of gods, (Easter) I 72; brave men likely to die in March, (Hervey) I 172; cause ascertained by priest from appearance of ghost, (Society) I 360; caused by absence of soul, *see under* Soul; caused by anger of god, (Mangaia) II 5; caused by the catching of sleepers' souls,



Death (*cont.*)

(Samoa) I 216–17, cf. Rotuma, I 223; caused by catching soul in net, (Bukabuka) II 104–5, cf. 138; caused by curse of gods, (Society) I 253, 360; caused by curses of Tangaroa and Tu, (Society) I 65–6, II 149; caused by dead whose graves were desecrated, (Paumotu) II 85; caused by evil spirits entering food, (Society) I 360; caused by sin, *see under* Sins; caused by sorcery, (Society) I 372; caused by souls of dead, (Ellice) II 102, (Ongtong Java) I 284, cf. II 114, (Paumotu) II 84, (Samoa) I 341, (Society) I 395–6; caused by Ti'i's heron entering body, (Society) I 66; caused by watching setting sun, (New Hebrides) I 118; of chief, dog killed at time of, (Fate) II 119, cf. 123; of chief, matter for consideration of gods, (Samoa) I 330; comets and eclipses as omens of, (Samoa) I 113, 132; eclipses as omens of, I 118 (Ellice), 116 (Rarotonga); grasshopper as omen of, (Rarotonga) II 32; moon and sun having power over life and, (New Hebrides) I 104, 118; priest extracting soul from body after, (Tongareva) II 107; of priest, night-moths as omen of, (Marquesas) II 39; resulting with departure of soul and breath, (Marquesas) II 46, 151, cf. I 207, 208; resurrection from, *see* Resurrection; sneezing in presence of corpse an omen of, (Fiji) I 225, 230; spirit-ship bringing, (Samoa) I 333; stars as omens of, (Marquesas) I 207–8, 209, II 65, cf. Society, I 127, (Samoa) I 128, 129–30; stopping mouth of invalid to prevent, (Marquesas) II 41, 46; taboo days consequent on, I 273–4 (Marquesas), 257–65 (Society)

Death, origin of: II 145–53; death first introduced through murder, (Mangaia) II 151; due to Tiki, (Paumotu) I 210, 276, II 152, 177, (Rarotonga) II 28, 150–1, 169–70, (Society) I 65–6, II 149–50, 167; men dying because unable to cast skins, II 146–7 (New Hebrides), 146 (Samoa); the rat associated with death, (Niue) II 152; the rat and men dying, (Ongtong Java) II 146

Deification: of ancestors, (Ongtong Java) I 311, II 112, 113; of chiefs, (Samoa) I 337, *see also* Society, I 371, prayers of priests enabling kings' souls to become gods; of chiefs and *matabule*, (Tonga) I 344–5; of chiefs and priests, (Marquesas) II 39, 49, 52, 68; of souls eaten thrice by god, (Society) I 364, 385, 394, II 140, cf. Austral, II 108, 142; of souls of just, (Society) I 372, 387, II 137; of still-born infants, (New Hebrides, Futuna) II 115, 116; of suicides, (Easter)

II 109, 110, 130; the *ti'i* and *oromatua* as deified souls, (Society) I 394

Dengei, god, (Fiji) I 19

Destinations of souls: ancestral home, *see* Ancestral home in W., and *Havaiki*; at or behind base of sky at horizon, I 319, II 265, 302, 306, 309–12, 314–15; II 277 (Mangaia), 283, 284 (Marquesas), 295 (Ongtong Java), 289? (Paumotu), 268, 309 (Samoa), 271–2, 309 (Tonga); depending on conduct, *see under* Punishment and reward; depending on rank, *see under* Rank and the after-life; on earth or above it, associated with the kava people, (Melanesia) II 299, 300, 302, 313; on earth, to be associated with the later migrants, (Polynesia) I 302, II 338–40; on earth, for common people? (Manihiki) II 324, 325; on earth or in sky, to be associated with upper classes in Polynesia, II 302, 303, 317, 322–5, 327–8, 334–6, and *see* Table, II 318–21; groups having more than two destinations, II 126–7, *see also* Table, II 318–21; ideas as to, and confusion of cults etc., II 260–5; 294 (Bukabuka), 276–8 (Mangaia), 284–5 (Marquesas), 296, 297 (New Hebrides), 291 (Niue), 295 (Ongtong Java), 289–90 (Paumotu), 280 (Rarotonga), 291 (Rotuma), 269 (Samoa), 273–5 (Society), 271–2 (Tonga); invisible islands nearer than horizon? II 265, 302, 305–6, 308, 313; islands beyond horizon on “extended” earth, II 309–12, 313–15; one destination for all souls, II 126; situations and nature of, II 259–97; 294 (Bukabuka), 294 (Easter), 293–4 (Ellice), 292 (Fotuna), 275–80 (Hervey), 294 (Manihiki), 280–6 (Marquesas), 296–7 (New Hebrides), 290–1 (Niue), 295 (Ongtong Java), 286–90 (Paumotu), 291 (Rotuma), 267–9 (Samoa), 272–5 (Society), 292–3 (Tokelau), 269–72 (Tonga); in skies, to be associated with the later migrants, (Polynesia) I 302, II 218, 257, 259, 338–40; in skies, question of origin of, II 262–4; in skies, usually heavens, II 127, 258, cf. 265; in subterranean fire-region, part of Maui-volcano-cult, II 217, 257–8, 259, 336–8, cf. I 320; subterranean hades and paradise in west having common origin? I 292; subterranean places as hells, etc., II 127, cf. 258; underground, associated with lower classes in Polynesia, II 302, 303–4, 317, 323–6, 327–8, 334–6, and *see* Table, II 318–21; underground heaven for chiefs, (Marquesas) II 47, 52, 282, 284–5, 286, 323–4; underground heaven for chiefs and warriors? (Rarotonga) II 278–9, 280; underground heaven for good plebeians, (Paumotu) II 73, 76,

## INDEX

347

- Destinations of souls (*cont.*)  
 286, 287, 289; underground inferior heaven for middle-classes? (Marquesas) II 282; underground, part of the early Maui-cult, II 217, 244–5, 328, cf. I 302; in west, for all? (Fate) II 120–1, 297; in west, to be associated with *Havaiki*, II 261, 263; in west, to be associated with later migrants, II 217, 257, 259, 338–9; in west, association with setting sun, I 297–8; in west, *Tiburones* principally for chiefs, (Marquesas) II 43, 56; in west, for upper classes, II 267–8 (Samoa), 269–71, 272 (Tonga)
- Dirges, and laments, (Mangaia) II 4–8
- Divination from eclipse of moon, (Society) I 115
- Dog: dead man assuming form of, (Marquesas) II 43, cf. 50; in Fiji, devouring Maui-atalanga, (Tonga) II 162; killed, on death of chief, (Fate) II 119, 123; Rii changed into, (Paumotu) I 131, II 177; Saolevao as, (Samoa) I 146 *and n.* I; Toahitu incarnate in, (Society) I 59
- Dragon-flies: Maui associated with, II 193, 205 (Mangaia), 192 (Society); severing cords binding earth and sky, I 45
- Dreams: accounted as realities, I 215; 221 (Marquesas), 216 (Samoa); charms worn to ward off consequences of, (Rotuma) I 223; dead chiefs appearing in, I 395 (Society), 356 (Tonga); dead communicating with living in, (Easter) I 231, (Mangaia) I 220–1, II 7, 21, (Marquesas) I 222, (Samoa) I 216, 341, (Society) I 219, (Tonga) I 217–18, *see also* Bukabuka, II 105; “dreamers” in high repute, (Society) I 219; gods communicating with human beings in, I 222 (Paumotu), 219–20 (Society), 218 (Tonga); gods communicating with orator “sleeping” at *fono*, (Samoa) I 216; gods communicating with priests in, I 223 (Ellice), 222 (Marquesas), 219 (Society); gods indicating victim in, (Marquesas) I 222; gods intimating need for victim in, (Society) I 220; important events determined by, (Hervey) I 221; living communicating with each other in? (Marquesas) I 221–2; living man’s soul coming to his body in, (Society) I 204, 220, 373; living persons seen in, I 220 (Society), 218 (Tonga); nightmare, (Samoa) I 216; soul wandering from body in sleep and, *see under* Soul; Tingilau sleeping in *malae* to confer with gods, (Samoa) I 216
- Drowned persons: bodies of, becoming porpoises, (Samoa) I 322; going to heaven, (Society) I 366, 391; souls not resting, (Samoa) I 321, 322; terms for ghosts of, (Society) I 203
- Dual people (Melanesia): chieftainship absent or undeveloped among, II 299–300, 301, 303, 327; of lower culture than kava people, II 298–9, 327; in Polynesia, cult dominated by that of kava people, II 332–4, cf. 217–18; racial difference between kava people and, becoming class difference in Polynesia, II 326–36; Rivers’ conclusions as to kava people and, II 297–301; sitting-interment section of, original population of Polynesia, II 298, 301, 327, 328; underground hades etc. of, associated with souls of common people in Polynesia, II 302, 303–4, 327–8, 334–6; underground hades and volcano-cult of, II 299, 300–1, 302, 313
- Duck, head marked by Maui, (Society) II 192
- Dying god: feast on annual departure of gods, (Marquesas) I 370, II 173, *see also* Huahine, I 365, 391–2; feast celebrating return of Mahoui or sun, (Marquesas) I 175, II 173–4, cf. 164 *and n.* 2; renewing the “shell” of the gods, (Society) II 164; winter the season of mourning or of departure of gods, (Marquesas) II 173, cf. I 370, *see also* Mangaia, I 173, II 4, 7, 18–19, 19–20, souls of dead departing in winter
- Eagle, constellation known, (Fotuna) I 136
- Ears: dead with ears unpierced not admitted to other world, (New Hebrides, Futuna) II 116; used as bait for fishing up land, (Paumotu) I 36; widow breaking lobes of, (Tikopia) I 283
- Earth: associated with idea of mortality, (Society) II 148–9; composed of *Ao* and *Po* (Paumotu), II 73, 76; composed of three strata, (Paumotu) I 93, II 72, cf. 76; destinations on or above, *see under* Destinations; each group of islands enclosed by own sky, (Society) I 91, II 308, 311, 313–14; enclosed by sky as lid, I 77, II 307; (Marquesas) I 91, (Samoa) I 90, (Society) I 91, II 307, (Tonga) I 90–1; ending at horizon, I 77, II 264, 305, 307; (Samoa) I 90, (Society) I 91; extension of world beyond horizon, (Society) I 91, II 307–8, 309; extension of world beyond horizon and destinations on, II 309–12, 313–15; flat, II 261, 264, 307; (Samoa) I 90, (Tonga) I 90; flat and supported by pillar, (Samoa) II 210; flooded by water, I 4, 8, cf. 7 (Samoa), II (Society); god-

Earth (*cont.*)

dess of, Mahuike, Mauike, (Marquesas) II 196, 210; handle of, shaken by Mafui, (Samoa) II 210; man deriving from sand, rocks, or, *see under* Origin of Man; mud and seaweed the sources of origin, (Tonga) I 9–10, 83; origin of, *see* Origin of World; Papa “born” of the earth, (Rarotonga) I 14–15, 80; Papa as mother-earth, etc., I 76, 79–80, cf. 82–3; Papa, name meaning earth or rock, I 30; Papa and Tangaroa the original parents, (Tahiti) I 59, 61, 62, cf. 63; Papa and Vatea the original parents, (Mangaia) I 13–14, 80; Roua and, the sources of origin, (Society) I 64; sea existing before, I 78; 37, cf. 69 (Niue), 39, 73 (Ongtong Java), 48, 78 (Samoa), 11, 63? (Society), 18, 78 (Tokelau), 55, 132 (Tonga); and sea-serpent, parents of mankind, (Ellice) I 72, 82; shaped like a coconut-shell, (Mangaia) I 11; as shell of Tangaroa, *see under* Egg; and sky, the original parents, etc., *see under* Sky; supported by a god, (Society) II 214; supported by Maui, II 155, 208, 244–5; (Samoa) II 184, 209, (Tonga) II 211, 212, cf. I 33, Maui going below islands to keep them up; supported by Salefu, (Samoa) II 211; supported by Tati, (Samoa) II 185–6, 209–10, cf. 237–8; supported by Ti’iti’i, (Samoa) II 210–11; surrounded by Po, I 77–8, II 261, 262–3; sustained by worm-like being, (Mangaia) I 12, cf. Marquesas, I 68 and 81–2; Tangaroa sustaining rock-foundation of, (Society) I 59

Earthquakes: caused by Hikuleo, (Tonga) I 348, II 212, 227–8, 232; *see also* the meaning of his mother’s name, I 10; caused by Lofia, (Tonga) II 212, 213, 228, 238; caused by Maui, II 155, 208, 245; 215–16 (Fotuna), 41, 175, 196, 210, 253, 283, cf. 64 (Marquesas), 155, 184, 185, 186, 209, 210–11 (Samoa), 214, 228, 233 (Society), 189, 210, 211–12, 227–8, 232 (Tonga); caused by Maui and Rou, (Society) I 141, II 164, 208, 214, 228, 233; caused by Tangaroa, (Society) II 214, 228, 233; caused by Tati, (Samoa) II 186, 209–10, cf. 237–8; caused by Ti’iti’i-a-talanga? (Samoa) II 210–11; earthquake etc. in the first heaven, (Niue) II 88, 91–2, 255, 290–1; human sacrifice etc. at time of, (Tonga) II 212; less violent after maiming of Mafui, (Samoa) II 186, 206, 210; as omens, (Samoa) II 187, 210; terms for, resembling name of Maui, II 215 (Niue), 210 (Samoa), 211, 212 (Tonga)

East: associated with happiness, (Samoa) I 241, 269; head of corpse turned towards, (Samoa) I 241

Easter Island, Mangarevan king making war on, (Paumotu) I 222

Eclipses: caused by clouds, (Tonga) I 114; caused by gods eating sun or moon, I 118 (Ellice), 116 (Hervey), 117 (Marquesas), 115 (Society); of moon, divination from, (Society) I 115; omens of death or of arrival of ship, (Ellice) I 118; omens of deaths of chiefs, I 113 (Samoa), cf. Hervey, I 116; omens of war, etc., (Samoa) I 113; prayers and offerings made during, I 118 (Ellice), 116 (Rarotonga), 115 (Society), 117 (Tokelau); of sun, due to god’s hiding himself, (Marquesas) I 117; sun dying during, but resuscitated by prayer, (Ellice) I 118; sun and moon copulating at times of, (Society) I 115, 122; sun and moon dying during? (Samoa) I 113; of sun, omens of calamity, (Marquesas) I 117

Eels, etc.; connected with origin of man, I 81–2; 67–8 (Marquesas), cf. Ellice, I 72; head of Tuna producing coconut, (Paumotu) II 178; souls of dead returning as, (Tonga) I 356

Egg: the earth as Tangaroa’s shell, (Society) I 30, 31 cf. 19, 65; evolution of world etc. from, (Fiji and Hawai’i) I 19; Tangaroa in, casting his shell, etc., (Society) I 19, 59, 65, II 146

Ellice Islands, origin, I 72

Embalming: bodies exposed and dried, (Paumotu) I 275; bodies of upper classes preserved, (Society) I 251; corpse dressed and fed during process of, (Society) I 252; disembowelling of chief’s body at remote *marae*? (Society) I 259, 261; Mahow’s corpse preserved, (Society) I 259; persons performing, avoided, (Society) I 254; practised occasionally, (Samoa) I 247; priests in attendance at time of, (Society) I 252, 253; temporary preservation of corpse, (Marquesas) II 40, 132, cf. I 271; widow lying by corpse undergoing process of, (Society) I 252

Erivada, priest, (Funafuti) I 223

Eua (Tonga), origin of, I 55

Evening star: a cannibal woman, (Samoa) I 128–9; the guiding star, (Society) I 123; names for, I 132 (Mangaia), 134 (Marquesas), 135 (Niue), 128 (Samoa), 120, 122, 123 (Society), 132 (Tonga); as omen of death, (Samoa) I 128, 129–30; Venus as, I 136? (Fotuna), 134 (Marquesas), 135 (Niue), 128 (Samoa); Venus and Jupiter associated with, (Society) I 122–3; west wind the brother of, (Samoa) I 129, 145; wind sent by spirit in, (Ongtong Java) I 153



## INDEX

349

- Excrements: new-born infants the excrements of the gods, (Samoa) II 143, cf. Society, I 376, II 143; and re-birth of soul passing through god, II 143-4; soul for which rites not performed wandering near, (Marquesas) II 42; of souls in paradise falling on souls in hades, (Mangaia) II 21
- Eyes: of blind woman recovering sight, *see under* Coconut; of god, glance causing pregnancy, etc., (Society) I 62-3; of living, torn out by spirits, (Marquesas) II 45, (Tahiti) I 398
- the *Fafa*, entrance to spirit-worlds, (Samoa): circular openings in rocks at, I 326, 327, 329; dual entrance included under this term, I 327; entrance to lower regions from, I 330; entrance to *Pulotu* from, I 333, cf. II 156, Ti'iti'i going from earth to *Pulotu* by; entrance to *Pulotu* and *Sa-le-Fe'e* from, I 326-7, 328, 329, 352; Fe'e associated with, I 325; gods dwelling in, etc., I 327, 330; as hades, caverns under sea, I 328, 329 and *n. 2*; hole for chiefs and hole for commoners at, I 326-7, 328-9; hole for chiefs leading to *Pulotu*, I 327, 328, 329-30; hole for commoners leading to *Sa-le-Fe'e*, I 327, 328, 329-30; journey of souls to, *see under* Souls, journeys of; on land, and place where sun set in sea, I 328; Leosia ruling over, I 328, cf. 330; *Luao* another name for, I 324, 333; and *Luao*, meaning hole, I 326, 332, 333; *Luao* the name of Manu'an entrance, I 324, 326, cf. I 326, *Luao* name also given to Savai'i entrance; and Manu'ans' separate entrance to under-world, I 324, 325-6, 329, II 249; under the sea, I 326-7, 328, 329 and *n. 2*; spirits congregating at, I 330, 341, 342; Ti'iti'i falling into, I 146, 330, 354, II 156, 249; tree of Leosia near, I 330-1, 352; a visible and a spirit *Fafa*? I 328, 329 *n. 2*; at western end of Savai'i, I 323, 326-7, 328, 329; and whirlpool entrance to under-world, I 324, 329, II 249; woman finding dead husband in, I 328, 329 *n. 2*
- Fainting: due to absence of soul, I 229 (Fiji), 229, 231-2 (New Hebrides), 216 (Samoa); recovery from, due to return of soul, (Mangaia) I 221, II 15, (Samoa) I 216
- Fakafotu, god, (Tokelau) I 151-2
- Fakarava, *Havaiki* ancient name for, (Paumotu) I 306
- Faka-Veli-Kele (Fotuna): to be identified with Tiki? II 179; principal god, II 179; son of Maui-Alonga, II 179
- Famine: brought by spirit-ship, (Samoa) I 333; earthquake at night omen of, (Samoa) II 187
- Fana and Ouru, ancestors of man, (Society) I 60
- Fanau, Hanau, wife of Tonofiti, (Marquesas) II 48
- fanaua*, evil spirits, (Marquesas) II 49-50
- Fanonga, god, (Samoa) I 154, 156
- Fao and Huanaki, ancestors of Niueans, I 69
- Fasting, occasions necessitating, I 273 (Marquesas), 257, 258, 261-2 (Society)
- Father's sister: and soul in hades, (Fate) II 119; Ti'iti'i sending Fe'e's head to, (Samoa) II 157
- Feasts: at birth, incision, etc., (Paumotu) II 241; connection with stars, (Society) I 123, 124; *fêtes* on nights sacred to Rongo and Tane, (Hervey) I 191; funeral feasts, (Marquesas) I 273, II 176; liberal contributors to, going to heaven, (Aneiteum) II 117, 118, 138; May the special month for, (Society) I 171; in November, (Samoa) I 155; seasonal feasts, (Marquesas) II 173, (Paumotu) I 177; "shell" of the gods renewed at, (Society) II 164; in spring, on return of Mahoui or the sun, (Marquesas) I 175, II 173-4, cf. 164 and *n. 2*; at time of departure of gods, (Marquesas) I 370, II 173, *see also* Huahine, I 365 and 391-2
- Feathers, *see* Red feathers
- Fe'e, cuttle-fish god (Samoa): associated with water, II 159; bringing forth rocks and islands, I 49, II 157; fighting with rocks, I 5 cf. 6, II 158, 159; fighting the Tangaroa-gods, I 157; as god of dead, preceding Si'uleo, I 337, 338, 349, II 155-6; as god of dead, superseding Mafui, I 338, II 155-6, 158; a later god than Maui, I 325, 348-9; and Maui, cuttle-fish legends representing conflicts between cults of, II 158-60, 249; and his progeny, living in lower regions, I 339; and Sa-Fe'e village in Falealupo, I 338, cf. 325; *Sa-le-Fe'e* associated with Fe'e or his family, I 49, 325, 328, 337, 338, 350, II 157, 269; *Sa-le-Fe'e* associated with Maui-gods as well as with, I 325-6, 338, 350, 354, II 156, 249, 269; Sina connected with? I 106; Tangaroa creating, I 49, II 157; Tangaroa first meeting Fe'e in Savai'i, II 157; Tangaroa later than, I 325; and Ti'iti'i, conflicts between cults of, II 158, 249; Ti'iti'i killing, II 157

- Fiji: first settling-place of "Tangaroans," I 303-4; Samoa, Tonga, and, called *Avaiki-raro*, (Rarotonga) I 293, 304; Tongan families derived from, II 163
- Fina-lesi, the goddess Hina? (Fotuna) II 179
- Finau I (Tonga): not having canoe coffin, (Tonga) I 251; funeral of, I 248-9; funeral of daughter of, I 248, 249 *n.* 1, 251; head chief of N.W. islands, I 217, 247 *n.* 6, 248; soul of, communicating with living, I 218; soul of dead son visiting, I 217-18, 356
- Finau II (Tonga): conspiracy against, I 218; plans of, upset by evil omen, I 219
- Fine and Sau, (Samoa) II 147-8
- Fingers, cut off to propitiate gods, (Tonga) II 212
- Fire: burning stick helping to bring back soul, (Futuna) I 232; in chief's house never going out, I 237-8; (Samoa) I 242-3; cuttle-fish fighting against, etc., *see under* Cuttle-fish; deceased cold through lack of, and haunting survivors, I 286-7 (New Hebrides), 321 (Samoa); from different parts of fire-deity's body, (Marquesas) II 197, 207; from different parts of god's body imparting soul to all things, (Society) I 206; explanations of use or non-use of, at funerals, I 236-8; extinguished at death to prevent ghost's being scorched? I 274 (Marquesas), 262, 264 (Society); firestone of Tati, (Samoa) II 186, 209-10, 237-8; fire-walker invoking Hina, (Society) I 100; funeral fires on open space of village, etc., (Samoa) I 242, 244, 245; near or at grave, I 241, 242, 244 (Samoa), 248-9, 250 (Tonga); in or near house (lamps and torches), (Tonga) I 249, 250; in or near house, and lighting grave, (Samoa) I 241, 242, 244, 245; in all the houses of village, on death of chief, (Samoa) I 242, 244, 245; lit to announce death, (Paumotu) I 277; lit at death as protection, (Samoa) I 242, 244-5, 246; lit to drive ghost away? I 286-7 (New Hebrides), 278 (Niue), 261? (Society); lit on grave, enabling soul to go to sun, (New Hebrides) I 118, II 121, 297, *cf.* Samoa, I 93-4, men reaching sky by smoke; lit as mark of regard for deceased, (Samoa) I 241, 242, 245-6; lit under trestle bearing corpse, (Ongtong Java) I 284; lit to warm deceased, I 286-7 (New Hebrides), 242, 244, 245 (Samoa); mourners wounding selves with, I 279 (Rotuma), 239 (Samoa), 283 (Tikopia), 280 (Tokelau), 247 (Tonga), 280 (Uvea); origin of all things attributed to, (Samoa) I 6-7; origin of man from rocks and, (Samoa) I 5; at Pare, lit for cooking food? (Tahiti) I 260, 261; at Pare, lit before taboo days began, (Tahiti) I 260; red feather girdle kindling, on return of Mahoui or sun, (Marquesas) II 173; souls of dead like sparks of, *see under* Souls of the dead; sun a substance resembling, (Tahiti) I 98, 114; taboo at birth of chief's child, (Society) I 258, 261; taboo on day of first catch, (Society) I 258, 261, 262, 263, 264; on taboo days, not kindled within sight, (Marquesas) I 273, 274, *cf.* Society, I 257-8, food cooked far inland, *and* Tongareva, I 282, no cooking near house of mourning; taboo at times of death or illness, I 273-4 (Marquesas), 257-8, 259, 261, 262-4 (Society); and water, origin of earth etc. due to marriage of, (Samoa) I 4, 8, 85, II 158, 159
- Fire legends, hero of: descending in bird form, etc., II 205; fighting and disabling fire-god, II 206; living on earth and discovering way to under-world, II 204-5; restoring sight to blind woman, etc., II 91-2, 205; setting fire to trees or conserving fire in trees, II 206-7; 198 (Niue), 187, 188 (Samoa), 199 (Tokelau), 189, 191 (Tonga), *cf.* Mangaia, II 194; the youngest of several brothers, or a member of youngest generation, II 204
- Fire legends, persons appearing in, II 201-4
- Fire, personage possessing: the original Maui, II 155, 208, 225, 244; Mafui, (Samoa) I 325, II 184, 185, 186, 187-8, 222; Mafuikē (f.), (Tokelau) II 199, 203, 205, 223; Mahuie, (Society) II 165, 192; Mahuikē (m.), (Marquesas) II 197, 203, 223; Mahuikē, Mauikē (f.), (Marquesas) II 41, 175, 196, 210, 253, 283; Maui associated with fire, (Paumotu) II 198, 214; Mauika, (Society) II 192, 202; Mauikē, (Mangaia) II 22, 171, 172, 192, 193, 223, 252; Mauikē (f.), (Rarotonga) II 196, 202; Mauikē (m.), (Rarotonga) II 215; Maui-the-father, (Niue) II 198; old Maui, (Tonga) II 189, 190; Moko-fulu-fulu, (Niue) II 88; Ruahinetamau-mauauahi (f.), (Society) II 191-2, 202, 228; Tangaroa-of-the-spotted-face, (Rarotonga) II 195, 202, 228; Tangaroa-of-the-tattooed-face, (Society) II 191-2, 202, 228; Tangaroatui-mata? (Rakahanga) II 200, 203; Tati, (Samoa) II 186, 209-10, 237-8
- Fire, the procuring of: Aoaomaraia introducing art of fire-making, (Society)

## INDEX

351

- Fire, the procuring of (*cont.*)  
 II 192; Hina sending to first heaven for fire, (Niue) I 107, II 88, 92, 198–9, 206, 254–5; Iro getting fire from Marotane, (Rarotonga) II 196; Kau introducing art of fire-making, (Ongtong Java) II 201; Maui fetching fire, etc., (Mangaia) II 192–4, (Society) II 191–2; Maui-kijikiji (kisikisi) fetching fire, (Tonga) II 188–91; Maui-motua etc., introducing art of fire-making, (Niue) II 199; Maui-poiti fetching fire, (Marquesas) II 196–7; Maui-potiki fetching fire? (Rakahanga) II 199–201; Maui-the-son fetching fire, (Niue) II 198; Maui-the-third fetching fire, etc., (Rarotonga) II 194–5; Maui-tikitiki fetching fire, etc., (Rarotonga) II 169, 195–6; Opolu getting firestone from Tati, (Samoa) II 186, 209–10; Talanga fetching fire, (Tokelau) II 199, 203, 223; Ti'iti'i fetching fire, etc., (Samoa) II 184–5, 186–8; *see also* Ellice, II 199, origin of fire  
 Firstborn, (Society) I 127, 264  
 Fish: attempting to raise sky, (Ellice) I 45; certain stars associated with, (Rarotonga) I 147–8, cf. II 169, (Samoa) I 130, (Tonga) I 132?; defeated by birds, (Samoa) I 5; origin of, (Marquesas) I 68; possessed and savage in May, (Samoa) I 154; souls of dead assuming forms of, (Mangaia) II 21, (Rotuma) II 95, (Tonga) I 356; souls of dead eaten by, (Reef) II 112, 142; Tangaroa the father of, (New Zealand) I 24; Ti'i of the exterior, guardians of, (Society) I 61; Tinirau the god of, (Mangaia) I 13; whale and ray once human, (Marquesas) II 41; worshipped by sick man, appearing before death, etc., (Society) I 396  
 Fish-hooks: of bone, origin, (Easter) I 231; hook from Manu'a fishing up islands, (Samoa) I 33, II 227, 231, (Tonga) I 34, II 232; mark of Maui's hook still visible, I 35 (Mangaia), 136 (Rakahanga); Maui's hook forming stars of Scorpio, (Mangaia) I 35, cf. 38, 133, (Marquesas) I 134, II 176, (Rakahanga) I 136; Maui's hook preserved as relic, (Marquesas) I 134, cf. 112, II 176, (Tonga) I 34; of 'Ui (Kui)-the-blind, catching souls, (Paumotu) II 80, (Society) I 375, 381, 383; Vatea's hook now the tail of Scorpio, (Hervey or Tongareva) I 38, 132–3; *see also* Nets  
 Fishing: Aldebaran and Polaris connected with, (Society) I 121; feasts in November, (Samoa) I 155; line of Amoshishiki existing, (New Hebrides) I 41; months named in connection with fish and, (Samoa) I 154, 155; *palolo*-fishing, *see* *under Palolo*; season ending in May-June, (Society) I 167; special nights adapted for, I 192 (Hervey and Marquesas); taboo on death of chief, (Society) I 258, 261; taboos connected with day of first catch, (Society) I 258, 261–2, 263, 264–5  
 Flood, tradition resembling story of, (Paumotu) I 69, 94–5  
 Fomalhaut known, (Society) I 121  
 Food: cooked far inland on taboo days, (Society) I 257–8, cf. Marquesas, I 273; cooking of, taboo in various circumstances, I 273–4 (Marquesas), 258, 260, 261–2 (Society), 282 (Tongareva); eating of, taboo in various circumstances, I 273 (Marquesas), 257, 258, 261–2 (Society); evil spirits entering, cause of death, (Society) I 360; gods fed before sunset, (Mangaia) I 291; Haumia-tikitiki the father of uncultivated food, (New Zealand) I 24; Maui offered part of food at meals, (Tahiti) II 163; of men, stolen by gods in *Avaihi*, (Mangaia) II 22; priests eating glutinous food in order to retain wisdom, (Hervey) I 206; relatives of victim eating under cloth, (Marquesas) I 273; Rongo-ma-tane the father of cultivated food, (New Zealand) I 24  
 Food offerings for the dead: I 282 (Bukabuka), 285 (Duff), 266–7 (Mangaia), 282 (Manihiki), 271, 272–3 (Marquesas), 286 (New Hebrides, Futuna), 278 (Niue), 275 (Paumotu), 279 (Rotuma), 240 (Samoa), 206, 252–3 (Society), 283–4 (Tikopia), 282 (Tongareva); "all dry", (Mangaia) II 6; dead enjoying smell or spirit of, (Society) I 206; essence of, enjoyed by soul, (Bukabuka) I 213, 282, II 105, (Mangaia) I 207, 267, (Samoa) I 240; god and soul of deceased eating, (Marquesas) I 273; hunger of gods pacified by, (Society) I 252–3; laid on grave, eaten later, (Duff) I 285; left to decay, (Marquesas) I 272, 273; live pigs allowed to die after decay of corpse, (Marquesas) I 273; man for whom offerings made suffering less in hades, (Fate) II 120, 133; none, (Tokelau) I 280; object of, to deprecate resentment of deceased, (Mangaia) II 5, (Niue) I 278, (Tokelau) I 282, (Tongareva) II 107; object of, to induce dying not to return, (Niue) II 92, cf. Marquesas, II 44–5, souls of dead haunting home till feast made; object of, to upraise deceased to life, (Manihiki) I 282; pigs sacrificed at funerals as? (Samoa) I 200; provided till corpse decayed, (Marquesas) I 272; provided till end of funeral feasts, (Samoa) I 240; provided indefinitely,

Food offerings for the dead (*cont.*)

(Tikopia) I 283, cf. New Hebrides, Futuna, I 286; provided during mummification of corpse, I 275 (Paumotu), 252 (Society); provided from 2nd to 5th nights, (Manihiki) I 282; provided while body watched, (New Hebrides, Aneiteum) I 286; renewed at anniversary feast, (Marquesas) I 273; for sustenance of dead man's soul, (Society) I 252; thrown on grave by passers-by, (Marquesas) I 273; Veetini giving instructions as to, (Mangaia) I 267, II 5; *see also* Property for the dead

Food and other offerings (admitting soul to heaven, etc.): food buried with corpse to save soul from Miru, (Aitutaki) II 33-4; given to god of *Havaiki*, (Marquesas) I 271, II 38, 48, 59, 67, 131, 281; given to guardians of road, (Marquesas) I 271, II 37-8, 48, 52, 67, 131, 281; given to Tiki, (Rarotonga) I 267, II 27, 31, 59, 131, 167; given to Tiki, formerly due to Rongo-ma-tane, (Rarotonga) II 27 n. 2, 170; large gift offered for chiefs going to paradise, (Marquesas) II 47, 68; small gift needed to admit soul to hades, (Marquesas) II 48, 132, 282; soul not supplied with, killed, (Marquesas) II 37-8, 53, 60, 281; soul not supplied with, lying in mire, (Marquesas) II 67, 132, 282; souls not supplied with, becoming *vehine hae*, (Marquesas) II 47, 68; souls not supplied with, left outside Tiki's house, (Rarotonga) II 27-8, 31-2, 59, 131, 279-80; souls supplied with, shown way from hades to heaven, (Paumotu) II 80; too costly to permit common people to go to heaven, (Society) I 369, 391, II 131, 134, 140; value increasing according to desirability of destination, (Marquesas) II 67, 131-2, 140, 282, cf. 52

Food in spirit-worlds: dead in first stages having plentiful food, (Nguna) II 123; delicious food enjoyed by suicides, (Easter) II 109; food in heaven good and plentiful, (Aitutaki) II 34, (Aneiteum) II 116, 117, (Bukabuka) II 105, (Fotuna) II 95, (Marquesas) II 38, 41, 44, 47, 281, (Paumotu) II 73, (Rarotonga) II 27, (Rotuma) II 93, (Samoa) I 336-7, (Society) I 364, 367, 369, (Tokelau) II 101, (Tonga) I 345; food in hell disgusting, II 48 (Marquesas), 117 (New Hebrides, Aneiteum), 115 (New Hebrides, Futuna); food in hell, insects, reptiles, etc., II 6, 19, 22 (Mangaia), 95 (Fotuna); food in hell turning to dirt in oven, (Fate) II 119; little food in hades, (New Hebrides, Aneiteum) II 117; no food in destination of common people, (Manihiki) II 104; soul destined

for hades dancing the dance of the starved, (Mangaia) II 4; soul not earning good burial hungry, (Fate) II 120; souls outside Tiki's house cold and hungry, (Rarotonga) II 27, 31-2; souls in *Po* hungry, (Paumotu) II 73

Foreigners: coming from behind sky, etc., (Society) I 91, II 307-8; coming through the sky, (Samoa) I 90, II 307; gods coming from sky, I 91 (Marquesas), 93 (Tokelau); white men, *papalangi*, II 74-5, 307; (Samoa) I 90, (Tokelau) II 101; white men, as souls of ancestors, (Tokelau) II 101, 292-3, cf. 108

Fotuna, origin, I 37

Fowls, origin, (Rotuma) II 93-4

Fuailangi, Le Fuailangi, (Samoa) I 55

Funafuti (Ellice): fetish worship introduced by Erivada, I 223; origin and original inhabitants, I 72

Funeral ceremonies: burial, *see that title*; carrying round chief's corpse, (Samoa) I 240-1, cf. Society, I 259, corpse of Mahow; ceremonial fight, (Paumotu) I 276-7; on death of chief, dancing, (Marquesas) I 272; on death of chief of highest class, (Ongtong Java) II 112-13; on death of Finau I, (Tonga) I 248-9; on death of "George I," (Tonga) I 249-50; on death of a *makua*, (Ongtong Java) I 284, II 113-14; on death of Mumui, (Tonga) I 250-1; on death of Niehitu, (Marquesas) II 43-4, 56-7; on death of *tuitonga*, (Tonga) I 249; "death talks" or laments, (Mangaia) I 267, 307; fires lit or extinguished in connection with, *see under* Fire; funeral feasts, (Marquesas) I 273, II 176; grave watched at night for fortnight, (Paumotu) II 85-6; high-priest addressing Tiki at, (Paumotu) I 276, II 152, 177; importance of rites, *see under* destination etc., *under* Souls of the dead, *and under* propitiation *under* Sins; period of mourning, (Tonga) I 248, 249, cf. 250, (Niue) II 92; putting sand on grave, (Tonga) I 248; self-wounding, *see that title*; sneezing taboo during, (Fiji) I 225-6, 230

Fuonga, (Rotuma) I 95

Futuna (New Hebrides): natives descended from Tongans, II 181; origin of, I 40-1

Gemini: called Open Valley, (Society) I 121; known as constellation, (Society) I 125, 126; *see also* Castor and Pollux

Genealogies: cord reminders of songs and, (Marquesas) II 39; going back to gods, etc., I 14-15 (Hervey), 15? 26 (Marquesas), 3-4, 7, 8-9, 83 (Samoa)

## INDEX

353

"George I," (Tonga) I 249–50

Gods: becoming mortal after breathing air of earth, (Tonga) I 58; begotten by means of Tangaroa's glance, (Society) I 62–3; children of earth and sky, I 80; 25–6 (Marquesas), 24 (New Zealand), 26–7 (Paumotu), 44 (Rotuma); children of Maui, (Tahiti) II 163; children of Tangaroa, (Tahiti) I 59, 61, 62; communicating with men in dreams, *see under* Dreams; country of, mortal to men, (Samoa) I 331; created by Tangaroa, (Society) I 59, 65; of the dead, *see under various groups under* Heaven and Hell; derived from rocks or stones, I 17 (Tahiti), 9–10 (Tonga); deriving from *Po*, (Society) I 74, 290, 291, 368; disputing as to fate of soul, II 105? 107? (Bukabuka), 102, 103 (Ellice), 43, 62, 63, 253 (Marquesas), 62 *n.* 1, 81, 84 (Paumotu); dying god, *see that title*; family god fetching soul of deceased, (Paumotu) II 75, 132; family god of Pomare, (Society) I 142; family god prayed to, (Samoa) I 322; family gods invoked for strength in fighting, (Samoa) I 154; family gods scraping flesh off soul, (Society) II 141, *see also under* *Oromatua*; family gods worshipped in February and March, (Samoa) I 154; fed before sunset, (Mangaia) I 291; high gods hidden in darkness, (Fotuna) I 291; inhabiting different strata in *Avaiki*, (Mangaia) I 11–13; inhabiting different strata of hell, (Fotuna) II 95–6; inhabiting different strata in sky, *see under* Sky; living in *Avaiki*, (Mangaia) I 291, (Marquesas) I 300, 307–8, II 48, 70, (Rarotonga) II 169, 278; living in the *Fafa*, (Samoa) I 327, 330; living in *Paparangi*, (Paumotu) II 73; living in *Po*, *see under Po*; living in *Pulotu*, (Samoa) I 327, 335, 336, 338, II 156, (Tonga) I 299, 346; living in *Sa-le-Fe'e*, (Samoa) I 327, 329 *n.* 2; living in *Tiburones*, (Marquesas) II 43, 56; man derived through misalliances of, (Society) I 65; minor gods, *aiku* and *kipua*, (Ongtong Java) II 113, 114; minor gods busied with affairs of men, (Mangaia) I 291, *see also* Samoa, I 330, the *aitu* conferring *re* war, epidemics, etc.; minor gods "dwellers in the day," (Mangaia) I 291; minor gods living in hell, (Marquesas) II 43, 56; often seen, (Marquesas) I 222; and punishment in after-life, *see under* Punishment and reward; tribal, souls of chiefs and priests, (Marquesas) II 49, 68; tutelar and departmental gods, (Society) I 142, *see also* the *Ti'i*; wandering about after sunset, (Mangaia) I 291

Grandfather: corpse of, inducing pregnancy, (Marquesas) I 208, II 44; soul

transmitted to body of grandchild, (Marquesas) I 208, II 44

Grasshoppers: infants killed returning in form of, (Society) I 397; omens of death, (Rarotonga) II 32

Graves: of commoners, (Samoa) I 246–7; the dead killing persons desecrating, (Paumotu) II 85; near dwelling-houses, (Samoa) I 242, 245; funeral fires near or at, *see under* Fire; grave burnt to drive away ghost, (Niue) I 278; grave of Rahu in Rotuma, I 71; grave of restless soul deepened till water came, (Tongareva) II 107–8; holes in tombs etc., for souls to escape, (Easter) II 109; kava offered at, I 279 (Rotuma), 283–4 (Tikopia); putting sand on, (Tonga) I 248; of *sou*, a hill, (Rotuma) I 71; soul of Finau giving instructions as to, (Tonga) I 218; stones thrown on, to keep spirit down, (Niue) II 92; of *tuitonga*, none venturing to plunder, (Tonga) I 247; vault or cromlech (chiefs), (Samoa) I 246; vault in the *faitoka*, (Tonga) I 248, 249; watched at night for fortnight, (Paumotu) II 85–6

Haamonga trilith, (Tonga) II 163

Hair: mourners tearing out, I 239 (Samoa), 251 (Society); rope of human hair securing sun, (Marquesas and Paumotu) I 112, *see also* Mangaia, I 111; of sun, on fish-hook, (Marquesas) II 176, *cf.* I 112; of travellers, torn off by spirits, (Society) I 398

Happa group, (Nukuhiva) I 92

*Harre-po*, (Society) I 368, 378

Haumia-tikitiki, god, (New Zealand) I 24

*Havaiki* (*Avaiki*, *Hawai'i*, etc.): below and in west, and the term *raro*, I 292, 315–16, II 260; confusion between subterranean *Po* and, I 313–16, 317–18, II 260–1; (Samoa) II 269, (Society) II 274–5, (Tonga) II 272, and *see under* Hervey Islands and Marquesas *below*; cult of, becoming confused with Maui-cult, II 258; and destination in ancestral home in W., I 296–313, II 261, 263; the fatherland of the Polynesians, I 292, 294, 312, II 263; and later home in N.E., (New Zealand) I 293 *n.* 1, 308–9; and later homes in E. or S.E., I 309–12; (Eromanga) I 311, II 123, (Manihiki) I 310–11, *cf.* 224, II 294, (Marquesas) I 309–10, II 71, 283, (Ongtong Java) I 311, II 112–13, 114–15, 295; name applied to later stopping-places, I 293–4, 312–13, II 263, 314–15; (Aitutaki) I 29, (Paumotu) I 68, 305–6, (Society and Rarotonga) I 293, 303–5, *cf.* 32; names



*Havaiki (Avaiki, Hawai'i, etc.) (cont.)*

of Polynesian islands known as regions in, (Hervey) I 299–300, 306–7, 312, II 1, 6, (Marquesas) I 300, 307–8, II 48, 70, 284; not a spirit-home in Samoa and Tonga, I 313–14; as spirit-land or under-world, I 292, 294; and the traditional movements of ancestors, I 301–13

—, *Avaiki (Hervey Islands)*: ancestral home in W., destination of souls, I 299, II 1, 276, 279; confusion between subterranean *Po* and, I 291, 299, 315, II 1, 276–7, 279

(*Aitutaki*): identified with Savai'i and W., I 29; a land below, I 29; a land of darkness, I 28; Maui ascending from, II 173

(*Mangaia*) Hell: day on earth night in, I 115, II 15; destination of all dying natural death, II 2, 16, 276; destination of persons not dying in battle, II 128, 275; destination of souls on *bua* tree, II 16, 275–6; destination of souls not going to skies, II 276; destination of souls sucked down by whirlpools, II 15; entrance hole from upper world to, I 11; entrance hole in W. closed by Tiki, II 22–3, 171, 172–3, 251, 252, 276; entrance through rock to Mauike's realm in, II 23, 193; excrements of souls in sky falling down to, II 21; food of souls in, II 6, 19, 22; gods of day descending to, I 291; gods of different strata of, I 12–13; gods in, sometimes ascending to earth, I 291; the greater gods living in, I 291; guardians of, II 192, 193; hades, II 1, 275; *Iva* a region in, I 307, II 6, 35; journey to, *see under* Mangaia *under* Souls, journeys of; Mangaia dragged up from, *see under* Mangaia; Maui getting fire from Mauike in, II 23, 172–3, 192–4, 202, 223, 228, 252; Maui's mother guarding road to, II 192; Maui's parents living in, II 192–3, 202, 204; Miru the goddess of, *see* Miru (*Mangaia*); night and darkness connected with idea of, I 291, II 20; paradise of Ngaru adjoining, II 24; real islands as regions in, I 307, II 1, 6; set on fire by young Maui, II 23, 172–3, 194, 252; souls eaten in, II 2, 16, 19, 142, 280 *n.* 1; souls submerged in lake in, II 16; sun-god Ra living in, II 192, 202; sun having holes of entry and exit at horizon, I 115–16, II 15, 22, 23; sun visiting wife in, I 116; underground home of dead, II 2, 7, 172 and *n.* 1, 275; a vast hollow under earth, II 1; Vera's soul going to, begging sun for new life? II 6

(*Rarotonga*) Heaven: closing of mountain road to, II 23, 169, 172–3, 208–9, 253, 278; food offerings to Tiki for

admission to, *see under* Food and other offerings, etc.; home of the gods, II 169, 278; home of Tangaroa? I 66; inmates of Tiki's house in, immortal, II 27; journey to, *see under* Souls, journeys of; the land of origin, I 167; once an ancestral home in west? II 279, 280; a place under the earth? II 27, 30, 278; souls of chiefs and warriors going to, II 28, 29, 57, 129, 278; souls of warriors going to, II 26, 27, 29, 31, 57, 128–9, 167, 278; those dying violent deaths going to? II 28, 29, 57, 129; Tiki the god of paradise in, II 27, 28, 59, 128–9, 167; Tiki's house in, paradise, I 267; II 27, 30–1, 127, 131, 167, 278; Tiki superseding Rongo-ma-tane as god of dead in, II 27 *n.* 2, 170; *for* souls outside Tiki's house *see* Rarotonga, Hell *under* Heaven and Hell

*Havaiki, Hawai'i, etc. (Marquesas)*: an ancestral home, II 64, 70; ancestral land in sea, destination of souls, II 39; ancestral land underground, destination of souls, II 42; ancestral land in W. and subterranean fire-region, II 41, 54, 64, 172 *n.* 1, 175, 176, 253, 285; ancestral land in W. becoming underground destination of souls, I 300–1; ancestral land in W. or underground, a hades, II 45, *cf.* 55; association with later stopping-place in S.E., I 309–10, II 283; a distant region in W., I 301, II 48–9, 70, 281, 284; entrance to path to, guarded by mat, II 197, 202; entrance-rock, and death statistics, II 39, 64; food offerings admitting soul to, *see under* Food and other offerings, etc.; guardian of entrance, grandmother of Maui-poiti, II 196, 197; guardian of entrance-rock, II 37; hades, I 300, II 40, 42, 51, 53; home of Mauike fire-goddess, II 41, 54, 175, 196, 253, 283; idea of, introduced by Tahitian migrants? I 309; islands pushed up from, I 35, II 42, 65; journey to, guardians of road, etc., *see under* Souls, journeys of; a land of fire, II 46, 64, 175, 253, 283; land where gods and men lived, I 300, 307–8, II 48, 70; the land of origin from which fruit-trees, etc., derived? II 38; no longer regarded as land of origin, I 300, II 48, 70; subterranean destination of the dead, II 36, 37, 48, 51; subterranean, or in distant valleys, II 40, 51, 53; subterranean region comprising two heavens and a hell, II 47–8, 66, 127, 131, 281–2

*Lower Havaiki*, Heaven: food good and plentiful in, II 38, 47, 281; persons of rank and wealth going to, II 38 *cf.* 37, 47, 52, 55, 59, 67, 68, 134, 282, 284–5, 286, 323–4; souls passing through *Upper Havaiki* to reach, II 37, 47–8, 51–3, 55,

## INDEX

355

- Hawaiki, Havai'i, etc. (cont.)*  
 66, 121–2, 131, 281; a subterranean paradise, II 38, 47, 51–2, 62, 66, 131, 281–2; Tonofiti eating certain souls in? II 38, 60–1, 281; Tonofiti ruler of, II 38, 51–2, 53, 55, 66, 131, 282, cf. II 48, Tonofiti chief of all *Havai'i*; *see also* Marquesas, Heaven *under* Heaven and Hell  
*Middle Hawaiki*: inferior subterranean heaven, II 47, 66, 131, 282; middle classes going to? II 282; plenty food in, II 47  
*Upper Hawaiki*, Hell: food disgusting in, II 48; lower classes going to, II 40, 56, 59, 282; a place of misery, II 48, 66, 131, 282; reached in ten days, II 281; souls suffering or dying in, II 53, 55, 66; *see also* Marquesas, Hell *under* Heaven and Hell  
*Hawaiki (New Zealand)*: ancestral home, destination of souls, I 293; imagined as an actual place, I 294  
*Hawaiki, Avaiki (Paumotu)*: ancestral land vanishing under sea? II 214–15; name of island fished up by Maui, I 36; name of land created by Vatea, I 68  
*Hawaiki (Rakahanga)*: Ina-mata-po living below in, II 200; one *Hawaiki* above and one below, II 199, 203  
*Havai'i (Tahiti?)*, spirit-world below, I 375  
*Havai'i Islands*: fished up by Maui and Ru, (Paumotu) I 36; Rarotongans deriving tattooing and art of fire-making from? II 169; and term *Hawaiki*, I 293  
Head: of corpse, turned towards east, (Samoa) I 241; of dead man bringing back soul of Sina, (Samoa) II 147–8; dying man exhorted to take care of, (Society) I 358; of Fe'e sent to Ti'iti'i's paternal aunt to eat, (Samoa) II 157; fire from god's head communicating soul to man? (Society) I 206; headless warrior, laying ghost of, (Samoa) I 323; heads of slain offered to Tangaroa, (Rarotonga) II 240; Maui-poiti getting fire from head, etc., of deity, (Marquesas) II 197, 206, 207; sacred, (Marquesas) I 209; skull of dead relation preserved, etc., (Society) I 376; soul of dying drawn out of, (Society) I 358; soul of Iro's son returning to, (Aitutaki) I 267–8, II 34; terms for soul and, similar, (New Zealand) I 198; of Tuna, coconut deriving from, (Paumotu) II 178  
Heart: seat of life and soul, (Tonga) I 203; term for, (Tonga) I 201; term for moon and organ of life the same, (Samoa) I 199  
Heaven and Hell: common origin of heaven in W. and subterranean hell? I 292; Hina and the under-world, I 104–8; sense in which terms used, II 51, 75, 126, 246, 267, 281; use of different names for same place, II 125–6; (Marquesas) II 54 n. 1, (Society) I 377–8, II 272 n. 1; *see also* Table, II 318–21, and Destinations of souls  
**Bukabuka**, Heaven: gods guarding souls in, II 105, 107; the house of Reva, II 105, 106, 142; occupations of souls in, II 105; souls in, eating essence of food offerings, II 105; for those not committing ceremonial offences or for chiefs? II 105, 106–7, 294; in west or underground, II 106, 294  
**Bukabuka**, Hell: god, Vaerua, II 105, 106, cf. 142; souls eaten in, II 105, 142; those committing ceremonial crimes, or lower classes, going to? II 105, 106–7, 294  
**Easter Island**, Heaven: in sky? II 108, 110, 142, 294; souls of good protected by Makemake, II 109, 110, 294; suicides enjoying delights of, II 109, 110, 130, 294; suicides having good food in, II 109  
**Easter Island**, Hell: souls of bad people eaten by Makemake, II 109, 110, 142  
**Ellice Islands**, Heaven: bright land in skies for “good” souls, I 388, II 78–9, 101, 102–3, 132–3, 293; souls going to the skies, II 102, 293; Teatamaofa ruler of, and the gods of earth, II 102, 103  
**Ellice Islands**, Hell: “bad” souls going to mud and darkness, I 388, II 78–9, 101–2, 133, 293; *Tia*, subterranean hades? (Nukufetau) II 102, 293–4  
**Fotuna**, Heaven: chiefs going to? II 98, 130, 292; enjoyments of, II 95; marriage a necessary qualification for, II 95, 96, 98–9, 130, 292; in the sky? II 97, 292; soul sometimes going to purgatory before entering, II 96, 99, 132; Teailoilo doorkeeper of, associated with Maui-alonga, II 97, 100, 255, cf. I 37; *vaiola* water in, renewing youth, II 95, 99; warriors slain or wounded going to, II 95, 98, 129, 292, and *see also* 96–7, old men waiting to be slain, etc.  
**Fotuna**, Hell: gods of different strata in, II 95–6; Mangumangu god of lowest stage in, II 95, 96; souls descending to lower stages, losing eyes, nose, etc., II 95–6; souls enclosed in subterranean caverns, etc., II 95, 97, 292  
**Hervey Islands**:  
**Aitutaki**, Heaven, *Iva*: delights of, II 34; not confined to upper classes? II 34–5; Tukaitaua, god of, II 34; *see*

Heaven and Hell (*cont.*)

*also under* Mangaia, Hell *below*, and Society, I 307 *n.* 2, 376, II 35, *Ivi* a land of ghosts

**Aitutaki**, Hell: domain of goddess Miru *below*, II 33; souls in danger of being eaten, II 33–4; souls plunging into lake in, II 33

**Mangaia**, Heaven: called *Tiairi* or *Poepoe*, II 20; journey to, *see under* Souls, journeys of; a place of “day” or “light,” II 2, 20; pleasures of, II 21; in the skies, II 2, 20–1, 275; warriors slain going to, II 2, 19, 21, 57, 128, 275, 276; warrior-spirits eaten by Rongo going to, II 20, 141–2, 171 *n.* 1, 275, 277; *see also* II 24, land adjoining *hades* discovered by Ngaru

**Mangaia**, Hell: *Avaiki*, *see under* Mangaia *under* *Havaiki*, etc.

*Iva*: a region for souls in *Avaiki*, I 307, II 6, 35; Tiki leading souls to *Iva*, II 6, 252

**Rarotonga**, Heaven: Tiki’s house in *Avaiki*, *see under* Rarotonga *under* *Havaiki*

**Rarotonga**, Hell: *Muru’s* domain: destination of all but warriors and chiefs? II 29, 31, 128–9, 278; entrance through holes in rocks? II 25; *Muru* the male counterpart of *Miru*, II 30, 278, *cf.* 279 and I 378; the same region as *Po*? II 279; souls caught in nets going to, II 25, 26, 30, 278; souls in, different from those outside Tiki’s house? II 32, 280; souls eaten by *Muru* in, sometimes passing to heaven? II 280 and *n.* 1; souls going to, eaten, II 27, 30, 32, 278; souls in nets trying to escape towards W.? II 25, 26, 29–30, 279, 280; a subterranean place? II 278, 279; Tiki killed by *Muru* and taken to? II 150–1

*Outside Tiki’s house*: souls cold and hungry in darkness, II 27, 31–2; souls in hell, II 28, 30, 31–2; souls in purgatory? II 30–2, 279–80, *cf.* 27–8, 131

*Po*, *see under* Hervey *under* *Pō*

**Manihiki**, Heaven in the skies?: the destination of chiefs, II 104, 294; *Ina* the moon-goddess ascending to *Mata-vera*, I 103

**Manihiki**, Hell? *Pofafa*, *see under* *Po*

**Marquesas**, Heaven: in burial enclosure? II 40, 53, 113; delights of, II 44; the “Eden” of the goddess *Oupu*, II 41–2, 54; “Eden,” good rich people going to, II 42, 56; “Eden,” lake in, II 42; in the lowest underground region, *see* Marquesas, *Lower Havaiki*, *under* *Havaiki*

*In the Sky*: beliefs as to stars and souls connected with? II 65–6; confusion between underground heaven and, II

52–3, 64, 284–5; dead priest and warriors sailing in canoes to? I 274, II 40, 53, 56; a delightful place, II 39; an island in sky, II 39, 53, 63; journey to, *see under* Souls, journeys of; souls of chiefs going to, II 47, 49, 68, 280–1, 282, 284–5; souls of priests going to, II 38–9, 49, 51, 52, 53, 55, 67, 68, 280–1, 282, 284–5

*Tiburones*: chiefs going to, II 43, 58; a delightful place, II 43; home of great gods, II 43, 56; natives sailing to, II 43, 63, 70; suicides going to, II 43, 57, 110, 129; warriors slain going to, II 43, 56, 57, 129, 282; in the west, II 43, 51, 54, 63, 70; women dying in child-bed going to, II 43, 57, 129, 130

*Vevao*: natives sailing to happy land of, II 41, 54, 63

**Marquesas**, Hell: a dark gloomy land with muddy water, II 42, 51, 54, 56; destination of slaves and poor people, II 42, 56; home of inferior gods and common people, II 43, 56; miserable fate of souls in rocks, etc., II 38, 53; soul of chief might go to heaven or? II 43, 44, 56–7, 58; souls not able to get to *Upper Havaiki* lying in mire, II 48, 66, 67, 132, 282; souls in mire, in *Tavi-oa’s* domain, II 48; Tiki the king of the under-world, I 106, II 46, 175, 253, 283, *cf.* 64, 176; *Tua-te-ahu-tapu* porter of, II 46; *see also* Marquesas, *Upper Havaiki* *under* *Havaiki*

**New Hebrides:**

**Aneiteum**, Heaven and Hell: the bad and mean going to hell, II 116, 117, 118, 138; crater entrance to spirit-world, II 117–18, 256, 296; food in each heaven good, II 116, 117; food in hell bad and scanty, II 116, 117; the good and liberal going to heaven, II 117, 118, 138; hell in *Imai* a place of misery, II 116; *Imai*, *Umatmas*, etc., each containing both heaven and hell, II 116, 117, 296; spirit-worlds in west or subterranean? II 117–18, 296

**Fate**, Heaven: in sun or moon, II 121, 122, 297

**Fate**, Hell: *Abokas*: below earth and sea, II 118, 121, 122, 296, 297; dark, with marsh, II 119; destination for souls of special clan, II 118–19; entrance to, *Tukituki*, II 118, 256; gods and guardians of, II 118–19, 143; no other destination for souls, II 118, 121, 122, 296; soul descending several stages and ceasing to exist, II 119 and *n.* 4, 120, 121–2, 125; in the west? II 122

*Lakinatoto*: another name for *Abokas*? II 122; guardian of entrance, II 121; in the west, II 120, 121, 122, 297

*Pakasia*: another name for *Abokas*? II 122; a place of fighting and cannibalism, II 121; subterranean, II 121, 297

## INDEX

357

Heaven and Hell (*cont.*)

**Futuna**, Heaven: still-born infants enjoying endless happiness, II 115, 116

**Futuna**, Hell: entrance guarded by god in stone near sea, II 115–16; good and bad going to, II 115, 116; souls reaching lower stage becoming dead shells, II 115; subterranean, a miserable place, II 115

**Nguna**, Hell?: souls in, afterwards transformed into animals or sticks, II 123

**Niue**, Heaven: *Ahohololoa*, *Ahonoa*, *Ahona*: inferior heaven, or place for lower classes? II 89, 90, 290; a place of light, II 87, 88–9, 290; the same as the *Auroroa* of the Maori? II 87; virtuous going to, II 87, 88–9, 129, 138, 290; warriors included among the virtuous? II 87, 129, 138

*The First Heaven*: below *Motu-a-Hina*, II 88, 89, 90, 290; earthquake etc. associated with, II 88, 91–2, 255, 290–1; *Hina* asking for fire from, I 107, II 88, 89, 92, 198–9, 206, 254–5; the same as *Ahonoa*? II 89, 290

*Land-of-Sina-in-the-Skies*: the “favourite” destination, a place of perpetual day, I 103–4, II 88, 178, 290; same place as *Motu-a-Hina*? II 90, 290

*Motu-a-Hina*: a heaven for upper classes? II 89, 90, 290; *Hina* living in second heaven or, II 88, 89, 254; inhabitants having communication with mankind, II 87, 92; meaning of name, I 104, II 89, 290 *n. i.*; the second heaven above, I 104, II 87, 88, 89, 90, 290; the second heaven above distinct from *Ahohololoa*, II 87, 89

**Niue**, Hell, *Maui*: domain of god *Maui*? II 91, 254, 291; entered through reed bush? II 198, 205; to be identified with *Po*? II 91, 290, 291; subterranean region for dead, II 88, 178, 290

*Po*, see under *Niue under Po*

**Ongtong Java**, Heaven: for highest chiefs, ancestral home in E.? I 311, II 112–13, 114–15, 295

*Va-e-langi*: above the stars, II 113, 115, 295; home of *Va-e-langi* and other spirits, II 113; for souls of the *makua* class, II 113, 115, cf. 295

**Ongtong Java**, Hell? *Muli-a-au*: destination of common people, II 114, 115, 295; destination of women of all classes, II 114, 115; the end of the reef, II 114; a jumping-off place? II 115, 295

**Paumotu**, Heaven: see *Tables*, II 76, 287; souls of the blessed going to, I 93, II 72, 76, 77; souls going to, if rites performed, II 74, 76, 78; souls praying to god taken to, II 81, 83–4; uppermost stratum of world, II 72, 76

*Kororupo*: for good plebeians, II 73,

76, 78, 286, 287, 288, 289; name meaning nether-world, II 74; a pleasant place, II 73, 75, 76; souls in *Paparangi* and, communicating, II 73, 83, 286, 288, 289; subterranean, II 73, 76, 287, 288, 289

*Paparangi*: name indicating situation in sky, II 74–5, cf. 76, 77, 287; the Olympus of the gods, II 73; only persons obeying god going to? II 75, 78; a paradise, II 73, 75; souls in *Kororupo* and, communicating, II 73, 83, 286, 288, 289; warriors and upper classes going to, II 73, 76, 77, 129, 132, 287, 288, 289

*Po-porotu*, see under *Po*

**Paumotu**, Hell: see *Tables*, II 76, 287; destination of impious persons, II 73, 75, 78, 138; destination of those behaving badly, I 93, II 72, 76, 77, 142, 286; lowest stratum of world, subterranean, II 72, 76, 287; a muddy pond (subterranean?) II 73, 76–7, 287, 288; a pond into which gods hurled the souls, II 81; souls destined for, escaping in bodies of birds, II 72, 79, 86, 142, 286, 288; souls eaten in dark place if rites not performed, II 74, 76, 79, 142; underground region of ‘Ui-the-blind? II 79–80; see also *Po* and *Po-kino under Paumotu under Po*

**Reef Islands**, heaven for those slain in battle? II 111, 112, 129

**Rotuma**, Heaven, *Limari*: all souls going to, II 93, 94, 291; fowls derived from, II 93–4; a happy place, II 93; *Ngarangsau* ruler of, II 93; under sea, off west coast, II 93–4, 291

**Samoa**, Heaven, *Pulotu*: destination of all souls? I 326, 333; destination of chiefs, I 327 cf. 326, 328, 329–30, 335, 336, 337, 351, II 128, 267; destination of those behaving well? I 335, 339–40; destination of warriors, I 336, II 128; an Elysium, I 328, 336–7, 338, 351, II 267; entrance to, at the *Fafa*, see under *Fafa*; god ruling over, see *Savea Si’uleo*; gods dwelling in, I 327, 335, 336, 338, II 156; a hades? I 327; hades or *Sa-le-Fe’e* confused with, I 335; an island in north-west, I 335, II 268; journey to, see under *Souls*, journeys of; *Po-poroutu* of *Paumotu* equivalent to? II 74; *Rohutu-noanoa* of Society Islands the same as? I 373, 393; in the sea not far from *Falealupo* in W., I 335, cf. II 308; on other side of sky, I 336, II 268, 309; souls of chiefs as pillars of Si’uleo’s house in, I 337, 395; Ti’iti’i going from earth by *Fafa* to, II 156; under the earth, I 335, II 268; under or near *Manu’a*, I 336; under the sea, I 335, 350, II 268; water of life in, see under *Vaiola*; in the W., I 335, II 267–8; in the W., ancestral

**Heaven and Hell** (*cont.*)

home, I 299, 335, II 305; western heaven confused with subterranean hell, I 349–55; in the W. originally, and not subterranean, II 267–8, 269

**Samoa**, Hell, *Sa-le-Fe'e*: entered from the *Fafa* in Savai'i, I 326, *see also* the *Fafa*; entrance from Manu'a, I 325–6, 329, II 249; Fe'e or his family associated with, I 49, 325, 328, 337, 338–9, 350, II 157, 269; gods dwelling in, I 327, 329 *n.* 2; hole for commoners leading to, I 327, 328, 329–30, 335, 337–8; home of lower classes, I 337, 338, 351, II 267; journey to, *see under* Souls, journeys of; the "land of the bound," etc., I 327, 329–30, 335, 337–8; Mafui living in, I 338, 350, II 188; Mafui's region under Manu'a adjoining, I 325–6, 338, 339, II 187; Mafui and Ti'iti'i associated with, I 354, II 156, 249, 269; a place of punishment, I 327, 337, 338–9; *Pulotu* confused with, I 335; *Pulotu* and, the counterparts of *Bulotu* and *Lolo-fonua*, I 349–55, II 161; Si'uleo superseding Fe'e in? I 338, 350; souls eaten in? I 339, 351, II 142; subterranean, I 338–9; subterranean or under the sea, I 49, II 268–9; Ti'iti'i closing road from Manu'a to? I 325, 329, II 23, 156, 187–8, 252; Ti'iti'i fetching fire from, I 338, cf. 339, 354, II 156, 188, 249; an unpleasant place, I 327, 328, 337–8, 351, II 267; a volcanic region below, I 338, 350, 354, cf. II 249, 268–9

**Society**, Heaven: of the *areoi*, on plain, (Huahine) I 371; of the *areoi*, on top of mountain, I 363, 375, 386; celestial strata of *Po*? II 261, 262–3; for drowned persons, I 366, 391; souls feasting with Maui in the sun, *see under* Sun; Tangaroa creating hell and, 160; women admitted to, I 368; *see also* Assembly house of gods and dead

*Miru*, *Merou*, etc.: destination of souls, I 362, 368; a kind of heaven, I 364; Mirro-Mirro an island not far off, I 366; *Rohutu-noanoa* equivalent to *Mount Miru*, I 365, cf. 377–8

*Rohutu-noanoa*: abode of the elect, I 362, 368; above or near mountain in Ra'iatea, I 360, 361, 362, 377, 379–80, 382, II 272, 274; annual return of gods and souls to, I 370, 391–2; the *areoi* of the first six classes going to, I 369, 390; destination of the *areoi*, I 360, 362 cf. 363, 364, 369, 386, 390, 392; destination of the *areoi* and upper classes, I 389, II 272; distinct from the heavens of the gods, I 362; friends of chiefs going to, I 369, 386, 391; invisible to mortals, I 361, 377; journey to, *see under* Souls, journeys of; low-class servant *areoi* not going to, I 390–1; lower classes

excluded from, I 389–90, cf. 369, 391, II 131, 134, 140; members of middle-class going to? I 389, 391; *Miru* probably identical with, I 365, 377; a paradise, I 360, 361, 364, 365, 369, 373, 392–3, II 127, 272; persons respecting priests, etc., going to, I 361, 373, 387, II 137; a place of light, I 369; as a region in hades, I 376; *Rohutu* the place of the dead in *Po*, I 376; *Rohutu* and *Pulotu* the same? I 373, 393; Romatane the keeper of, I 365, 376, 394; souls going to, not eaten? I 385; souls transported to, from *Po*, *see under* Society *under Po*; *Taviroua-l'orai* another name for, I 386, 392; *Tourooa-t'erai* another name for, I 380; Urutaetae guiding souls to, I 365, 369, cf. 394

**Society**, Hell: entrance through lake on Ra'iatean mountain? I 363, 371–2, 381, 383, II 272–3; eternal night, I 365–6, II 140; wicked going to lake, I 363, 371, 387

*Po*, *see under* Society *under Po*

*Rohutu-namu-namua*: foul-scented *Rohutu*, I 371, 393; inferior heaven or a hell? II 127; not the best part of hades, I 376, 393

*Tayahoboo*, *Tiahoboo*: a hell? I 367, 386, 393; lower classes going to, I 366, 367, 378, 386; and souls diving into water? I 366–7, 378, 381, 383, 393, II 273

**Tikopia**, Heaven? souls going to sky, II 111

**Tokelau**, Heaven: inferior heaven far away for common people, II 101, 292–3; in the moon for kings and priests, etc., I 117, II 100, 101, 292, 293

**Tokelau**, Hell: a condition of misery, II 101, 292, 293; souls dragged about world by devils, II 100

**Tonga**, Heaven, *Bulotu*: an ancestral home, I 299, 346–7, 351; ancestral home in W., I 299, 346? II 305; ancestral home in W., not subterranean originally, II 269–71, 272; as the antipodes of Tonga, I 299, 346–7, 350–1; approached through earth or by sea, I 346; below the earth, I 346, II 188, 270; confused with *Lolo-fonua*, II 191; confused with *Po*, I 290 *n.* 1, 299, 350–1, II 270, 272; a distant island reached through sky beyond horizon, I 346, II 271–2, 309; in the E.? I 346, II 270; entrance to, cave with reed bush? II 188; everything impalpable in, I 347; first men having wives from, I 56; god ruling, Hikuleo, *see under* Savea Si'uleo; gods from, peopling Tonga, I 58; home of the gods, I 299, 346; an island etc. in N.W. or W., I 346, II 269; an island not far off, I 346, II 308; living woman's soul visiting in dream, I 218; Maui bringing



## INDEX

359

Heaven and Hell (*cont.*)

stones of trilith from, II 163; Maui living in? II 188–9, 191, 202; mortals drifting to, dying, I 347; not offering attractions to the Tongans, I 348; the only destination of souls, I 344, 345, II 126; as a place of misery, I 348, 351, II 270, cf. 188, 191; as a pleasant place, I 347–8, 351, 356; and probable existence of destination like *Sa-le-Fe'e*, I 349–55, II 161; several *Bulotu*, varying in pleasantness, I 345, 348, 351, II 126, 270; souls of chiefs etc. going to, I 345, 351, II 269, 272; souls of chiefs and heroes going to, I 299, 346; souls of common people going to? I 345; souls of dead posts in Hikuleo's house in, I 348; souls of *matabule* going to, I 345, cf. II 269; Tangaroa taking men to, I 58, 349; water of life in, I 344; a western heaven confused with subterranean hell, I 349–55

**Tonga**, Hell, *Lolofonua*: the antipodes of Tonga, I 353; below the earth, I 11, 352, 353, II 190, 271, 272; *Bulotu* confused with, II 191; *Bulotu* and, as counterparts of *Pulotu* and *Sa-le-Fe'e*, I 349–55, II 161; a dark place, I 352, 353, 355; destination of common people? II 271; destination of souls not going to *Bulotu*, I 11, II 161; entrance to, hidden by reeds, I 353, II 190; a hades below, like *Sa-le-Fe'e*, II 191, 271; Maui coming from, to fish up islands, I 34, 353, 355, II 161, 250; the Maui family chiefs in, I 353–4, 355, II 161, 189, 250; the Maui family deriving from, I 33–4; Maui the fire-god living in, I 353, 355, II 190, 202, 250; the Maui-gods connected with, I 355, II 161–2, 202, 250, 271; Maui going to, as ruler, I 10, 353, 355, II 161, 250; Maui-kisikisi restored to life by *nomu* tree in, II 190, cf. I 343, 352–3, 355, II 161–2, 250; meaning of name, I 11, 352; path to, I 353, cf. II 190

Heron, of Ti'i, slaying men, (Society) I 65–6, II 149

Hikuleo, *see under* Tonga under Savea Si'uleo

Hina (Ina, Sina): and the god Tangaroa, I 97–104; and the Maui-gods and the under-world, I 104–8; and the moon, I 99–104; or the moon, connected with idea of resurrection, *see under* Resurrection, or restoration of soul; the only deity connected with moon, I 97; and the term for moon, I 96–7

Hina (**Fotuna**): Fina-lesi to be identified with? II 179

Hina (**Hawai'i**): dwelling in the moon, I 103; husband turning into Pleiades, I 103

—, Ina (**Hervey Islands**): names for moonlight connected with, I 102

(**Atiu**): mortal husband of, returning to earth, I 102, II 150

(**Mangaia**): cloth of, I 102; daughter of Kui-the-blind, I 105; Maui catching sun with hair of Ina-ika, I 111; and names for moonlight, etc., I 102; oven of food in sky, I 102; wife of the moon, I 102, 103, 105

(**Rarotonga**): daughter of Rongo and ancestress of Makea family, I 14; Ina-the-blind Maui's grandmother, I 106, II 194–5, 202; Ina-the-fish, sister of Maui, I 106, II 194, 202; making of mats and cloth taught by, I 102; the Milky Way the "fish" of, I 111 *n.* 3; mother of Tiki, associated with waters of life, II 28, 150, 169, 253; Tangaroa the father of, I 102, 109; Tangaroa the husband of, I 66, 109

Hina, Ina, Sina (**Manihiki**): ascending to spirit-land in sky, I 103; helping Maui to fish up land, I 107, II 180; moon-goddess, I 103

Hina (**Marquesas**): the clouds the stone terraces of, I 91–2, 93, 103; daughter of Mahuika and wife of Maui-[tikitiki], II 197, 203, 223, cf. I 106, II 175; immortal, born again, II 151–2; wife of son of Tiki, II 174; wife of Tiki and queen of under-world, I 106, II 175

—, Sina (**New Hebrides**, Aneiteum): daughter of sun and moon, I 104, 109; the wife of the sun, I 104, 109, II 182; the woman in the moon, I 104, 109, II 182

Hina (**New Hebrides**, Fate): grandchild of Maui-tikitiki? I 107

Hina (**New Zealand**): moon-goddess, I 103

Hina (**Niue**): and articles of dress made in *Motu-a-Hina*, I 104; the land of Sina in the skies, I 103–4, II 88, 90, 178, 290; *Motu-a-Hina* heaven named after, I 104, II 89; sending for fire, I 107, II 88, 89, 92, 198–9, 206, 254–5

Hina, Ina (**Paumotu**): daughter of Rona, I 103; fleeing to moon after liaison with Tiki, I 15–16, II 152, cf. 177; goddess of subterranean hades, I 106, II 73–4, 177; Maui the husband of, I 107, II 177; paying court to Maui, II 178; Rii the son of, II 177; seen in moon, I 103; sister of Tiki and the Maui brothers, I 36, II 222; Tiki the father of, I 103, 105, 107; Tiki the husband of, I 68, 107; Tiki and Ina-one parents of men, I 106, II 177; 'Ui identified with, I 105–6; Vatea creating Tiki and, I 68, 107, II 177

- , Ina (**Rakahanga**): Ina the sister of the Maui brothers, II 199–200, 203; Ina-mata-po the blind ancestress of Maui-potiki, II 200–1, 203, 205
- , Sina (**Samoa**): associated with bark-cloth, I 100; connected with idea of resurrection, *see under* Resurrection; connection with Fe'e and the underworld? I 106; daughter of Tangaroa, I 49, 97, 101, 109; daughter of *tuifiti*, I 109, 200, II 147–8; going to moon after death, I 100; as the moon and the mother of sun, I 100–1, 109; representing the “woman” in the moon, I 100; and Tingilau, I 94, 101, 331–2, II 148; and the *tuli* or snipe, I 48, 49, 97, 109; wife of Pili? I 4; wife of the son of the sun, I 109; wife of Tafa'i, I 100–1; wife of Tangaroa, I 109; wife of Tangaroa's son, I 98, 109; worshipped in May, I 154; worshipped in July, I 156
- Hina (**Society**): art of cloth-making taught by, I 99, 114; associated with Tangaroa in creation myths, I 59–61, 97, 108; connected with idea of resurrection, I 65, II 148–50, 167; created by Tangaroa, I 59; fire-walker invoking, I 100; the first woman, going to the moon, I 61; goddess of the air, I 61, 99; goddess of the moon, I 99; goddess of the sea, I 61; having two faces, I 65; instructing Maui how to get fire, II 191–2; moon created and inhabited by, I 59, 99; as the moon, wife of the sun, etc., I 108; names for, connecting her with moon, I 60, 99, 100, 108; Oro the son of, I 60, 108–9; and Tangaroa, associated with earthquakes, II 214; Tangaroa the father of, I 59, 97, 99, 108; Tangaroa the husband of, I 60, 97, 99, 108–9, II 166; Ti'i the father of, I 60, 105; Ti'i and, the first man and woman, etc., I 61, 106, II 166, 224; Ti'i the husband of, I 65, 105, II 149, 167, 224; Ti'i the son of, I 60, 105, II 166
- , Sina (**Tonga**): the sister of the Maui brothers, I 105; the woman in the moon? I 102
- Hiro, *see under* Iro
- Homitemous*, term for wood and mountain spirits, (Rotuma) I 70
- Hotu-matua, (Easter) I 180
- House-building, taboo on day of first catch, (Society) I 258, 261, 262
- Huanaki and Fao, ancestors of Niueans, I 69
- Huku (Iku) connected with origin of Manihiki, etc., I 38
- Human sacrifice: children buried alive with corpse of priest, (Marquesas) I 272; connected with tree near entrance to hades, (Tonga) I 343; in connection with earthquakes, (Tonga) II 212; enemy victims rowing priest etc. to heaven, (Marquesas) I 274, II 40, 56; gods commanding, in dream, (Society) I 220; nights of month favourable for catching “fish of the gods,” (Hervey) I 192; sacrifice of widows, *see under* Widows; song in honour of Atea sung during rites connected with, (Marquesas) II 242; taboo days connected with, (Marquesas) I 273; at time of illness, (New Hebrides) I 287; victim indicated by gods in dream, (Marquesas) I 222; victims eaten raw, (Marquesas) II 41, 65
- Hurricanes, god of, (Tokelau) I 151
- Hydra, Alphonse a pillar of the sky, (Society) I 121
- Ihoiho, (Society) I 11, 74
- Iku, *see* Huku
- Illness: absence of soul causing death or, *see under* Soul; caused by gods, Tiki closing *Avaiiki* opening on account of, (Mangaia) II 22; caused by souls of dead, (Funafuti) II 102, (Niue) I 278, II 93, (Paumotu) II 85, (Samoa) I 341, (Society) I 254; caused by the *tupapau*, (Rapa) II 108, (Society) I 396; and death, associated with sins, *see under* Sins; or death, the penalty for looking at setting sun, (New Hebrides) I 118; divination from eclipse respecting, (Society) I 115; family not doing enough to avert, (Society) I 254, 255; gifts brought to dying, paying for priests' services during, (Samoa) I 201 and *n. 2*; god entering invalid's body and driving evil spirit away, (Paumotu) II 82, 84; and human sacrifice, (New Hebrides) I 287; infectious illness a matter for consideration of gods, (Samoa) I 330; in month of March? (Hervey) I 172; in month of May, (Samoa) I 154; mouth and nose of dying man closed to prevent egress of soul, (Marquesas) II 41, cf. 46; oracle consulted as to cause of, (Samoa) I 201 *n. 2*; prayers during, *see under* Prayers; recovery from, due to return of soul to body, II 105, 106 (Bukabuka), 15, 16 (Mangaia); red stone invoked etc. during, (Ellice) I 223; sick girl taken to spring, (Niue) II 152–3; souls of dead implored to restore sick, (Society) I 376; souls of dead removing, (Society) I 367–8, 385, II 141; souls of *matabule* interceding with gods

## INDEX

361

- Illness** (*cont.*)  
*re* health, etc., (Tonga) I 345; spirit-ship bringing, (Samoa) I 333; Tama curing sharks' bites, etc., (Paumotu) II 73
- Images**: no image of Maui, (Tonga) II 161, cf. Society, II 163; post representing deceased buried with "sins," (Society) I 254; priests sleeping beside, (Society) I 219; sorcerer inducing spirits to enter, (Society) I 372; soul lodging in the *tee* at burial-places, (Society) I 203–4, 366, 367; at temple, (Marquesas) II 174; terms for ghosts and, the same, I 213 (Niue), 203, 204 (Society); Tiki associated with image-making and, (Marquesas) II 174, 175; *tiki* made for anniversary funeral feasts, (Marquesas) II 176
- Imai**, spirit-world, (Aneiteum) II 116–17
- Imbeciles**, regarded as inspired and having a god, (Society) I 59
- Immortality**: Ina dissociating herself from death? (Atiu) II 150, cf. I 102; Ina trying to secure everlasting life and youth to Tiki, (Rarotonga) II 28, 150–1, 169–70, cf. 253; lizard associated with, (Ong-tong Java) II 146; loss of, and origin of death, II 145–53; Maui endeavouring to regain immortality lost by Tiki, (Paumotu) I 210, II 152, 177, cf. 144; men unable to cast skins and thus mortal, (New Hebrides) II 146–7; shell-fish casting "skins," but men dying, (Samoa) II 146; of souls eaten by gods, (Society) II 140, 141, 143; souls in Tiki's house enjoying perpetual youth, etc., (Rarotonga) II 27; Tangaroa renewing body by casting shell, (Society) I 59, II 146; *see also* Resurrection, or restoration of soul *and* the *Vaiola*, or Water of life
- Ina**, *see under* Hina (Ina, Sina)
- Incantation**: made by priest obtaining wind, (Hervey) I 147; procuring entrance into spirit-world? (Society) I 375, 381
- "Incense," offered to corpse, (Marquesas) I 272
- Incest**: incestuous liaison of Faka-Veli-Kele, etc., (Fotuna) II 179; incestuous liaison of Tiki and Hina, (Paumotu) I 15–16, 107, II 152; *tiki* the term for, (Niue) II 178–9
- Incision**, Tane prayed to at feast after, (Paumotu) II 241
- Infants**: killed, souls returning in grasshoppers, (Society) I 397; new-born, the excrements of the gods, (Samoa) II 143, cf. Society, I 376, II 143; still-born, becoming gods, (New Hebrides, Futuna) II 115, 116; term for ghosts of, (Society) I 203
- Inhungaraing, Inhucheraing, Nungerain** (Aneiteum): fishing up island, etc., I 40; and loss of immortality, II 147; origin of man due to, I 40, 73; a principal god, I 40, II 181; sun-god, II 181
- Inspiration**: chief inspired by dead woman in *Bulotu*, (Tonga) I 218, 356; deified spirits in *Po* inspiring people, (Society) I 364, 385, II 140; god inspiring king's son, (Fotuna) II 179; imbeciles regarded as inspired, (Society) I 59; Maui not inspiring anyone, (Tonga) II 160, 211; person inspired assuming name of inspiring god, (Society) II 165; persons inspired by Maui? (Society) II 163, 165; priest inspired in dream, (Society) I 219; souls of chiefs inspiring priests, etc., (Tonga) I 356; souls of dead in paradise inspiring people, (Society) I 365; souls of dead "possessing" enemies and friends, (Samoa) I 341; souls of *matabule* not inspiring priests, (Tonga) I 345, 356
- Invocation**: of dead chief, by priests, etc., (Tahiti) I 397; of household gods in March, (Samoa) I 154; of sky-god from tree, (Fiji) I 164
- Iro** (Aitutaki), and turtle due to Puna, I 267–8, cf. II 34
- Iro** (Mangaia): first day of month sacred to, I 191; patron of thieves, I 191
- Iro** (Rarotonga): getting fire, etc., II 196, 206; pursuing Tane, II 196; soul of woman associated with father of, sent back to earth, II 28, cf. 57
- , **Hiro** (Society): first day of month sacred to? I 191 *n.* 4; Venus guiding ship of, I 138
- Iva**: heaven, (Aitutaki) II 34–5; region in *Avaiki*, (Mangaia) I 307, II 6, 35, cf. 252
- Ivi**, a place of ghosts in or near Mehani Mt., (Ra'iatea) I 307 *n.* 2, 376, II 35
- Ivieinui**, guardian of entrance to hades, (Marquesas) II 48
- Jupiter**: confused with Venus, I 132 (Hervey), 122–3 (Society); conjunction of Venus and, (Samoa) I 128; name only known to few, (Society) I 123; name for Saturn or, (Fotuna) I 135; names for, I 130 (Samoa), 122 (Society); relationship of other stars to, (Society) I 121, 124, 126; as Ta'urua-nui, (Society) I 123

- Kahuone, goddess of sands, wife of Tiki, (Marquesas) II 174, 175
- Karanga-iti cave, (Mangaia) II 3, 5, 11, 13, 14 and *n.* 1, 18
- Karangfono, (Rotuma) II 93–4
- Karika or Makea group (Rarotonga): district, II 24; genealogy traced back to gods, etc., I 14; representing Samoan element in Rarotonga, I 305; souls of, having own island route, II 24–5, 29; souls of, having own trees, II 25, 30
- Kau, introducing art of fire-making, (Ongtong Java) II 201
- Kauava Cave, (Mangaia) II 7, 9, 10, 12, 17 *n.* 1
- Kava, one of the first men, (Tokelau) I 18, II 180
- Kava: among articles taken with soul to other world, II 37 (Marquesas), 27 (Rarotonga); kava-bowl of Rahu still seen in Rotuma, I 71; of Miru, stupefying souls in *Avaiki*, (Mangaia) II 19; offered at grave, I 279 (Rotuma), 283–4 (Tikopia)
- Kava people: arriving in different bands and at different periods, (Polynesia) II 298, 327, 328–9, cf. I 303; beliefs as to ancestral home to be associated with later migrants, I 302–3, II 217, 257, 259, 322, 338–40; chieftainship developed among, (Melanesia) II 300, 303, 327–8; dead going to spots on or above earth, (Melanesia) II 299, 300, 302, 313; and destinations on earth or in sky, (Polynesia) I 302, II 304–12; and destinations in west or in sky, (Polynesia) II 217–18, 257, 259, 338–40; earth or sky cult of, to be associated with upper classes in Polynesia, II 302, 303, 317, 322–5, 327–8, 334–6, and see Table, II 318–21; gods of, dominating but not suppressing Maui-gods, (Polynesia) II 332–4, cf. 217–18; of higher culture than dual people, II 298, 299, 327; Indonesia the original home of, I 302; and institution of chieftainship in Melanesia, II 299–300, 329–30; and institution of chieftainship in Polynesia, II 330–2, cf. 304; later migrants in Melanesia, II 298; later migrants in Polynesia as in Melanesia, II 303, 328, cf. I 302–3; racial difference between dual people and, becoming class difference in Polynesia, II 326–36; Rivers' conclusions as to dual people and, II 297–301
- Keruahine, goddess, (Ongtong Java) II 113, 115
- Kijikiji, see *under* Tonga *under* Maui-tikitiki
- Kiukiu (Marquesas): starting-place for spirit-world, II 36, 37, 41, 47, 62, 71; strings on post at, marking departures to *Havaiki*, II 39, 64
- Kohai, Koau and Momo, first men, (Tonga) I 56, 57
- Koko-e-langi, god, (Ongtong Java) II 113–14
- Kolofeeva (Tonga), see Lofia
- Konohu, guardian of road to under-world, (Marquesas) II 37
- Kore-kore* days, I 195–6; 194–5 (Easter), 191 (Hervey), 192 (Marquesas), 193 (Paumotu), 187, 189 (Society)
- Kororupo*, heaven for good plebeians, see *under* Paumotu, *under* Heaven and Hell
- Kourapapa, chants for, (Mangaia) II 6–7, 15, 21
- Kui, inferior god, (Ongtong Java) II 114, 115
- Kui-the-blind (Mangaia): mother of Ina, living in hades, I 105; see also Ina-mata-po, (Rakahanga) II 200–1, 203, and Ina-the-blind, (Rarotonga) I 106, II 194–5, 202
- Kui-the-blind (Niue), cf. Niue tale of blind woman, II 88, 91, 254
- , 'Ui-the-blind (Paumotu): catching Arihi with hook, II 80; catching souls with net, II 80, 81; coconuts restoring sight to, II 80, 81, 91; having oven in under-world, II 79–80; identified with Hina and Kui, I 105–6
- , 'Ui-the-blind (Samoa): cf. 'Ui and Tangaroa, I 98, 101, 106
- Kui, 'Ui-the-blind (Society): associated with *Po*, I 375, 381, 383, 393, 394, II 273; coconuts restoring sight to, I 375, II 91; living in spirit-world below, I 375; trying to catch boys with hook, I 375, 381, 383
- Kure, (Rotuma) II 95
- La'i, the west wind (Samoa): and Ti'iti'i, I 145–6, 330, II 156; and Toiva, I 129, 145
- Lake: in "Eden", for good and rich to bathe in, (Marquesas) II 41–2; of fire in hades in *Po*, (Paumotu) II 73–4, 77, 254, 287, 288; of Miru, souls going to *Avaiki* submerged in, (Mangaia) II 16; on mountain, entrance to hell, etc., (Society) I 363, 371–2, 381, 383, II 272–3; mountain lakes direct entrances to nether-world, I 319–20, II 247; muddy pond or mud in hell, see *under*

## INDEX

363

- Lake (*cont.*)  
 Hells of Ellice, Marquesas, and Paumotu, *under* Heaven and Hell, and *under* *Po-kino* (Paumotu) *under* *Po*; souls going to hades plunging into, (Aitutaki) II 33; *see also* the *Vai ali*, or Water of death and the *Vaiola*, or Water of life
- Lakinatoto, hades, (New Hebrides, Fate) II 120-1, 122, 297
- Lata, creator-god, (Reef Islands) I 73
- Laukiti, (Ellice) I 117
- Legend-keeper: of Manu'a, (Samoa) I 50, 53, 86; powers "inhaled" by son at death, (Society) I 205-6
- Leosia (Samoa): ruling over the *Fafa*, I 328; tree of, I 330-1, 352
- Light: Atea associated with, *see under* Atea; children of Ti'i associated with darkness and, (Society) I 60; figuring in the cosmic myths, (Samoa) I 3, 8; let in, by separation of earth from sky, I 76, 289; 24-5 (New Zealand), 25 (Niue), 15, 26-8 (Paumotu), cf. 25-6 (Marquesas); let in by splitting open sky, (New Hebrides) I 28; Tane associated with, *see under* Tane; Tangaroa associated with, II 257, and Society, I 19, 30-2, 76; Te-erui discovering land of light, (Aitutaki) I 28-9; only twilight when Maui on earth? (Tonga) I 42
- Light, sound, stability, evolution of, I 19-32, 75-6, 288-9; 23-4 (Hawai'i), 12-13, 29-30, 289? (Mangaia), 19-22 (Marquesas), 24-5? (New Zealand), 30-2 (Society)
- Lightning: origin of, (Society) I 62; sent down by souls of chiefs, (Manihiki) II 104
- Limari, home of dead, (Rotuma) I 279, II 93-4
- Liver: same term for "will" and, (Samoa) I 199; seat of courage, I 206 (Hervey), 203 (Tonga)
- Lizard: associated with idea of immortality, (Ongtong Java) II 146; associated with S.W. wind, (Society) I 144; king lizard preserving grandson from Miru, (Mangaia) II 23-4; souls of common men feeding on lizards, (Tonga) I 345, 351, II 270; Tonga-iti incarnate in, I 14
- Lofia, Kolofee (Tonga): association with volcano of Tofua, II 212-14; causing earthquakes, II 212, 213; grandson of Nafanua, II 213, 228; as substitute for Maui, II 228, 238
- Lolo, creator and first inhabitant of Ongtong Java, I 39, 73, II 113, 201
- Lono, *see under* Hawai'i *under* Rongo
- Losi, attacking the Tangaroa family, (Samoa) II 157
- Lu, *see* Ru
- Luao (Samoa), I 324, 326, 332, 333
- Magellanic Clouds: names for, I 136 (Fotuna), 132 (Samoa), 127 (Society), 132 (Tonga); relationships to stars, (Society) I 121, 124, 127
- Maggots, men deriving from, *see under* Origin of Man
- Mahina, spirit-canoe, (Paumotu) II 82-4, 286, 288, 289
- Mahow, chief of Eimeo, I 257, 259-61
- Maisiki (New Hebrides): first catch sacred to, II 181; a sea-god, II 181; tutelar god of Futuna and Aniwa, II 181
- Makea group (Rarotonga), *see under* Karika, etc.
- Makemake, Mekemeke (Easter): creator god, I 72-3; god of dead, II 109, 110, 142, 294
- Makuvai-fare, (Rakahanga) II 199
- Malay Peninsula tribes, belief in western paradise, I 297-8 *notes*
- Malietao chiefs, genealogy, (Samoa) I 3-4, 85
- Mangaia (Hervey): dragged up from *Avaiki* by Rangi, I 14, 35, II 8, 171, 228, 234, 241, 251; fished up by Maui, I 35, II 228; Ngariki, Tongan, and Tane groups in, II 8-9, *see also those titles*; Rangi the first king of, II 234, 241
- Mangareva (Paumotu): fished up by Maui, (Paumotu) I 36, 68, II 177, (Society) I 35; fished up by Maui and Ru, I 36; Tangaroans dominant in, I 305, cf. II 236, 242-3
- Mangumangu (Mangungu), god of hades, (Fotuna) II 95-6
- Manihiki: natives derived from Rarotonga, I 224, 310, cf. I 224, 310-11, soul of sneezer going to ancestral home?; Maui[-tikitiki] fishing up, I 35, 38-9, 107, II 169, 180, 222; Scorpio the hook of Maui fishing up, I 136
- Manono (Samoa): brought from Fiji by Lautala, I 55; Fijian god spitting out Apolima and, I 55; Mafui removing spring of water from, II 211; origin of name, I 55



- Manu'a (Samoa): creation myths of, I 50-4, 86-8; the earthly home of Tangaroa, I 54; the earthly home of the Tangaroa family, I 33, cf. 53; existing before other islands, I 52-3, 54; islands fished up with hook from, (Samoa) I 33, II 227, 231, (Tonga) I 34, II 232; legends of, glorifying Tangaroa, I 86; Manu'a, son of night and day, I 52; as migration centre, I 304 *n.* I; Olosenga created by Le Fuailangi, I 55; peopling of, I 53; *Pulotu* below or near, I 336; region of Mafui under, I 325, 326, 338, 354, II 249; road between Mafui's place and, closed, I 325-6, 329, II 23, 156, 187-8, 252; Savai'i peopled from, (Manu'a) I 53, 54, 88; special entrance to under-world, I 324-6, 329, II 249; special entrance to under-world used by Tingilau? I 331-2; Tangaroa persuading Fe'e to go to, II 157; Tangaroans in, I 303, 324, II 231; at the verge of the world of men, I 331, 332
- Manuahifare, (Rarotonga) II 194
- Mapuhanui, and pigs for dead, (Marquesas) I 273
- Marae*: dead buried in family *marae*, (Society) I 370; high-priest sleeping in, (Society) I 219; near mountains, Mahow's body disembowelled at? (Tahiti) I 259, 261; of Pare, funeral of Mahow at, (Tahiti) I 259; priests praying in public *marae* and individuals in family *marae*, (Society) I 370; priests preventing people from entering, (Society) I 396; of Rongo, Tiki's hole near, (Mangaia) II 22; of Rongo, in west, (Mangaia) II 20, 22; stone-enclosure taboo except to priests, (Marquesas) II 40; of Tane, (Paumotu) II 242; Tingilau sleeping in, (Samoa) I 216; women mourners at stream near, (Tahiti) I 259
- Marotane, giving Iro fire, (Rarotonga) II 196
- Marquesas: genealogy of the two original tribes, (Nukuhiva) I 15; islands pushed up or fished up, I 35-6; Tahitian element predominating in language, I 309; Tahitian migrants introducing idea of *Havaiki*, I 309; Tongan migrants in northern islands, I 309
- Marriage: bride and strangling cord, (New Hebrides and Society) I 252 cf. 285-6; only married men going to paradise, II 99 (Fiji), 95, 96, 98-9, 292 (Fotuna); priest praying to Tane at weddings, (Paumotu) II 241; wooing of Tafai, (Samoa) I 101
- Mars: having two faces, (Society) I 124; known by time of rising, (Society) I 123; names for, I 130 (Samoa), 123-4 (Society); offering oblations for thought, (Society) I 121, 124; relationship to other stars, (Society) I 121, 124
- Mataliki, Matariki, etc., *see under* Pleiades
- Matariki, creator-god, (Bukabuka) I 18, 72
- Matavera*, spirit-land in skies, (Manihiki) I 103
- Matila-foafoa of *Motu-a-Hina*, (Niue) II 88, 92
- Matoetoea, first man dying violent death, (Mangaia) II 151
- Mats: Ina teaching art of making, (Rarotonga) I 102; mat-making taboo on day of first catch, (Society) I 258, 261, 262; Vele teaching art of making, (Tonga) I 34
- Matshiktshiki, Ma-tikitiki, *see under* New Hebrides *under* Maui-tikitiki
- Matua-uru*, (Paumotu) II 77-80
- the Maui family: associated with *Lolo-fonua*, (Tonga) I 355, II 161-2, 202, 250, 271; chiefs of *Lolo-fonua*, (Tonga) I 353-4, 355, II 161, 189, 250; deriving from *Lolo-fonua*, (Tonga) I 33-4; descended from Atea? (Rarotonga) II 170; descended from old Maui, II 245; the different generations of, II 221-3, cf. 201-4; first men provided with wives by, (Tonga) I 56; names of members of, (Marquesas) II 196, 203, (Niue) II 178, (Paumotu) I 36, (Rakahanga) II 199-200, 203, (Rarotonga) I 38, II 180, 194, 202, (Tonga) I 33-4, II 160, 188, 189, 202; names of members of, in the different groups, II 219-21; no offerings made to, II 160-1; places named after members of, (Society) II 164; as represented in fire-myths, II 201-4
- the Maui gods: and conflict of cults, Maui challenged by later gods, (Rarotonga) II 170; conflict with Fe'e etc. implying conflict of cults, (Samoa) II 158-60, 249; and destinations in subterranean fire-region, II 217, 257-8, 259, 336-8, cf. I 320; Hina's association with, I 104-8; later gods substituted for, II 225-30; 228-9 cf. 230 (Hervey), 229 (Marquesas), 229 (Paumotu), 229 (Rotuma), 227 (Samoa), 228 (Society), 229-30 (Tokelau), 227-8 (Tonga), 229 (Uvea); later gods substituted for, *see also* Atea, Hikuleo, Lofia, Pere, Rangi, Rii, Ru, Tane and Tangaroa; substitute-gods and, appearing together, II 239, 243, 245-6; 234-5 (Hervey), 236-7 (Paumotu), 231 (Samoa), 233 (Society), 237 (Tokelau), 232 (Tonga); substitute-gods leading gods in groups

## INDEX

365

the Maui gods (*cont.*)

where substituted, II 230–7, 240–3; substitution not that of one rival god, II 239, 243; substitutions made to magnify later gods, II 227, 243–4, 258, 333; volcano-cult originally relating solely to, II 217, 244–5, cf. I 302; or volcanoes, associated with the dead, II 246–56; 255 (Fotuna), 251–3 (Hervey), 253 (Marquesas), 256 (New Hebrides), 254–5 (Niue), 254 (Paumotu), 249 (Samoa), 250–1 (Society), 249–50 (Tonga)

**Maui** (Mafui, Mahui, Mahuika, etc.): deity of archaic cult of dead, II 154, 217; deity of under-world and oldest member of family, II 221, 222–3; earthquake and volcano god, II 155, 208, 245, cf. I 302; as the first man, would be Maui-tikitiki, II 223, 224, 245; as hero of the exploits, would be Maui-tikitiki, II 223, 224–5, 245; and Hina, I 104–8; lord of under-world of fire, II 155, 208, 225, 244; name Maui meaning witchcraft, II 166 *n.* 1; supporting the earth, II 155, 208, 244–5; term meaning life associated with? (Tonga) I 201–2, II 161; variant forms of name, II 154, 200, 221; not worshipped by lower classes only, II 333–4; not worshipped so much as Tangaroa and Tane, II 154

(**Ellice**) Mauke: first man, I 18, II 180

(**Fotuna**) Mafuisse-foulou: earthquake and volcano god, II 215–16; living in darkness, I 314 *n.* 1; same as Maui, II 216

(**Hawai'i**) Mauke: lord of fire, II 215

(**Hervey**) Maui, *see under* Hervey *under* Maui-tikitiki *below*

(**Mangaia**) Mauke: fire-god in *Avaiki* below, II 22, 171, 172, 192, 193, cf. 202, 223, 252; Maui burning domain of, II 172–3 cf. 23, 194, 252; Maui learning art of fire-making from, II 193–4

(**Rarotonga**) Mauke: lord of fire and father of Pere, II 215; woman ruler of fire, II 196, 202

(**Manihiki**) Maui: creating sun and moon, I 118, 180; *see also under* Manihiki *under* Maui-tikitiki *below*

(**Marquesas**) Mahuika, Mauke, Maui: fire-god, father of Hina, II 197, 203, 223, cf. I 106, II 175; fire-god, living under sea, II 197; goddess of earth, earthquakes, fire and volcanoes, II 196, 210; goddess of fire and earthquakes in *Hawaiki* below, II 41, 175, 196, 253, 283, cf. 64, 176; great-grandmother of Maui-poiti, II 41, 175, 196, 203, 223, 253; Mahuika an important deity, II 176; Maui an important god, II 176; Maui-poiti getting fire from head or mouth of,

II 197, 206, 207; spring feast in honour of Mahoui, I 175, II 164 and *n.* 2, 173–4

(**Niue**) Maui: Maui (the father) keeping fire below, II 198; Maui-matua, II 178; Maui-motua and son, first to kindle fire, II 199; *Maui*, subterranean region for souls of dead, *see that title below*; one of the principal gods? II 178; pushing up island? I 37; *see also* Maui *under* Niue *under* Maui-tikitiki *below*

(**Paumotu**) Maui, Mauika: associated with fire, II 198, 214; endeavouring to preserve men from death, I 210, II 144, 152, 177; Mauika killed by Maui, II 178; *see also* Maui, *under* Paumotu *under* Maui-tikitiki *below*

(**Rakahanga**) Maui, *see under* Rakahanga *under* Maui-tikitiki *below*

(**Samoa**) Mafui, Mafui'e: earthquake god, II 155, 184, 185, 186, 209, 210–11; fire always burning in region of, II 184, 184–5; fire in keeping of, I 325, II 184, 185, 186, 187–8, 222; fire-region of, adjoining *Sa-le-Fe'e*, I 325–6, 338, 339, II 187; fire-region of, in *Sa-le-Fe'e*, II 188; as god of dead, succeeded by Fe'e and Si'uleo, I 338, 348–9, II 155–6, cf. 158; helping Losi to fight Tangaroa-gods, II 157; living below the earth, II 155, 184, 185, 186, 187, 201, 209, 210, 211; living beneath Manu'a, I 325; living in *Sa-le-Fe'e* below, I 338, 350, II 188; Manu'an road to region of, closed by Ti'iti'i, I 325–6, 329, II 23, 156, 187–8, 252; one of the great gods, II 155; supporting the world, II 184, 209; and Ti'iti'i, association with *Sa-le-Fe'e* or hades, I 354, II 156, 249, 269; Ti'iti'i the "son" of the sister of, II 187, cf. I 325, II 156, 222; volcano-god, II 185, 186, 209, 210, 211

(**Society**) Mahuika, Maui, Mauika: a deified priest [Maui-tikitiki?], II 165–6; earthquake god, II 214, 228; earthquakes and winds attributed to Rou and, I 141, II 164, 208, 214, 228; feather and wicker image of, II 163; inspiring people? II 163, cf. 165; Mahuika keeping fire, II 165, 192; Mauika, fire-god below, II 192, 202; Mauika's region entered through rock, II 23, 193; as a name for or attribute of Tangaroa? II 214, 221; part of food at meals offered to, II 163; a second-class god, II 163; souls of dead feasting in sun with, I 114 cf. *n.* 5, 367, 383–4, 389, 394, II 164, 251; and spring feast? II 164; sun created by, I 110, 114 *n.* 5, II 214; supreme god, etc., II 163; *see also* Maui *under* Society *under* Maui-tikitiki *below*

(**Tokelau**) Mafuika: blind woman possessing fire below, II 199, 203, cf. 205, 223

**Maui** (*cont.*)

(**Tonga**) Maui, Maui-motua: ancestor of Hikuleo, I 349, II 161; brother of Tangaroa and Hikuleo, I 349, 353, II 161, 231, and *see* Table, I 10; descent from slime, stone, etc., I 9–10; earthquake god, II 189, 210, 211–12, 227–8; entrance to region of, cave with reed bush, II 188, cf. 190, 205; fire-god, II 189–90; grandfather of Maui-kijikiji (kisikisi), II 188, 189, 202, 222–3; having no image or shrine, II 161; not inspiring anyone, II 160, 211; and iron-wood tree, I 94; Kijikiji the younger son of, II 189, 222; living below the earth, II 160, 212; living in *Bulotu* below, II 188 cf. 191, 202; living in *Lolofonua* below, I 353, 355, II 161, 189–90, 202, 250; *Lolofonua* allotted to, as kingdom, I 10, 353–4, 355, II 161, 250; name associated with term for “life”? I 202; no offerings made to, II 160–1; oldest god, but no longer worshipped, II 160; the principal god, II 160; stones of trilith brought from *Bulotu* by, II 163; supporting the earth, II 211, 212, *see also* I 33, Maui going below islands to keep them up; and Tangaroa, restraining Hikuleo, I 348, II 161, 212, 227–8; twilight in days of, I 42

**Maui-atalanga** (Maui-alonga, Atalanga, Ataranga, Talanga, Taranga, etc.):

(**Fotuna**) Maui-alonga: associated with destination of dead? II 100, 255; father of Faka-Veli-Kele, II 179; fishing up islands, I 37, II 97; to be identified with Maui-ataranga, II 179; living in darkness, I 37, II 97, 179; supreme god, I 37, II 97, 179; Teailoilo doorkeeper to, I 37, II 97, cf. 100, 255

(**Mangaia**) Buataranga: a female Taranga? II 202, 228; guardian of road to *Avaiki*, II 192; living in *Avaiki*, II 192–3, 204; and Ru, parents of Maui, II 192, 223, 228

(**Paumotu**) Ataranga: father of Tiki-tiki, etc., I 36, II 222

(**Rarotonga**) Ataranga: Maui-tikitiki son of Tangaroa by wife of, I 43, II 168, 195–6, 202, 222 *n.* 2, 228–9

(**Samoa**) Talanga: father of Ti’iti’i, I 325, II 184, 185, 186, 201, 222; living in Aleipata, II 186; living on earth, II 184, 187, 201, 204; Pipi representing? II 185; wife of, Mafui’s sister, I 325, II 156, 187, 202, 222

(**Tokelau**) Talanga: fetching fire from below, II 199, 203, 223, cf. 205; and Tikitiki, fishing up islands, I 37, II 229–30, 237; and Tikitiki (m.), parents of Lu, I 18, 37, 44, II 180, 229–30, 237; and Tikitiki (m.), parents of men, I 18, II 180, 224

(**Tonga**) Maui-atalanga: deriving

from *Lolofonua*, I 34; father of Maui-kisikisi (kijikiji), I 34, 42, II 162, 188, 189, 202, 222, 223; living on earth, II 188, 190, 202, 204; living under the earth, II 160; meaning of name, II 222 *n.* 1; raising sky, I 42, II 162, 222; slaying carnivorous beasts, II 162; son of old Maui, II 189, 202, 223

**Maui-tikitiki** (Amoshishiki, Kijikiji, Mat-shiktshiki, Ma-tikitiki, Maui-kisikisi, Maui-poiti, Me-tikitiki, Mo-shikishiki, Tiki, Ti’i, etc.): the first man, I 107, II 223–4, 225, 328, 336; half man and half god, II 245; the hero of the exploits, I 107–8, II 154, 222–3, 224–5, 245; living on earth, I 107, II 225, 245, 336; the member of the Maui family associated with Hina, I 107–8; name meaning “small”? II 222; often referred to as “Maui,” II 204, 223, 224, 245; and tales of ‘Ui-the-blind, etc., II 91–2; Tiki a member of the Maui family, II 154, 218, 220–3, 336; Tiki a member of youngest generation, etc., II 204, 222–3, 245; Tiki the personal name of one of the Maui, II 203; variant forms of name in different groups, II 204, 220

(**Easter**) Tikitehatu: father of man, etc., II 180–1

(**Fotuna**) Tiki: Faka-Veli-Kele to be identified with? II 179

(**Hervey**), Maui[-tikitiki?]: Maui’s fish-hook now tail of Scorpio, I 35, cf. 38, 133

(**Aitutaki**): mankind descended from Maui, II 173; Maui ascending from *Avaiki*, II 173; Maui pushing up sky, I 43, II 229, 235; *see also* I 268, 270, god Ti

(**Mangaia**) Maui[-tikitiki?]: assuming form of bird, etc., I 43, II 193, 194, 205; descending through rock to seek fire, II 23, 193; descending by Tiki’s hole to seek fire, II 22, 171, 172, 252; destroying Mauike and nether-world with fire, II 23, 172–3, 194, 225; fetching fire, II 23, 192–4, 202, 223, 228, 252; fishing up Mangaia, I 35, II 228; Ina-ika the sister of, I 111; living in world of men, II 23, 192; Maui-the-third setting fire to Mangaia, II 169, 194; raising sky, I 43, II 20–1, 228; restraining the sun, I 111, 116; son of Ru and Buataranga, II 192, 223, 228; thrown up into sky by a god, I 35

(**Mangaia**) Tiki (f.): a female conception of Tikitiki, II 172, 251–2; helping to prolong lives of men, II 151; hole closed by, ancient entrance to *Avaiki*, II 22–3, 171–3, 209, 251–2, 276; leading souls across sea to hades, II 6, 22, 172, 252, 276; sister of first man dying natural death, II 4, 6, 22, 224

## INDEX

367

**Maui-tikitiki** (*cont.*)

**(Rarotonga)** Maui-tikitiki, Maui-potiki, Tiki: carrying fish to heaven, II 169, cf. I 147–8; emerging from cave and scattering rocks, I 43, II 168, 209; fetching fire, II 169, 195–6, 202, 223; fetching the winds, II 169, cf. I 147–8, 149–50; finding path to *Avaiki* destroyed, II 23, 169, 173, 208–9, 253, 278; fishing up islands, I 35, 38, 39, II 169, 180, 222; god of paradise in *Avaiki*, I 267, II 27, 28, 59, 128–9, 167, 278; having eight heads, II 168; introducing tattooing, II 169; lifting sky, I 43, II 168–9, 222, 228, 235; loss of immortality due to Tiki, II 28, 150–1, 169–70; Maui-potiki the youngest brother, I 38; Maui[-tikitiki?] challenged by gods of skies, II 170; naming of Maui-tikitiki-ataranga, II 168; son of Tangaroa by Ataranga's wife, I 43, II 168, 195–6, 202, 222 and *n.* 2, 228–9; Tiki the first man, II 28, 167, 224; Tiki first man to die in battle, II 27, 29; Tiki superseding Rongo-ma-tane, II 27 *n.* 2, 170

**(Rarotonga)** Maui-the-third: discovering fire, I 106, II 194–5, 202, 223; grandson of Tangaroa, II 194, 195, 202; and Ina-the-blind, etc., I 106, II 194–5, 202, 205; killing and resuscitating Tangaroa, II 151, 195

**(Manihiki)** Maui-tikitiki, Maui-potiki: fishing up islands, I 35, 38, 107, II 169, 180, 222; Maui pushing up sky, I 45; Scorpio Maui's fish-hook, I 136

**(Marquesas)** Maui-tikitiki, Maui-potiki, Tiki: ancestor of men, II 176; assuming form of bird, II 196, 205; creator-god, II 174, 175; descended from Atea, II 174, 175; destroying fire-god and setting fire to under-world? II 197, 206, 207; fetching fire, II 41, 175, 196–7, 206, 207, 223, 253; first man, II 175; first settler in Nukuhiva, II 174–5; great-grandson of Mauike, II 41, 175, 196, 203, 223, 253; not having beginning or end? II 174, 224; and Hina-Mataone, I 106, II 175; O-Hina-ua wife of son of, II 174; image-making introduced by, II 174, 175; and images at funeral feasts, II 176; an important god, II 174, 175; not invoked, II 176; Kahuone the wife of, II 174, 175; king of the under-world, I 106, II 46, 175, 253, 283, cf. 64, 176; Maui catching sun in noose, I 112, II 176; Maui fishing up islands, I 35–6; Maui marrying Hina daughter of Mahuike, II 197, 203, 223, cf. I 106, II 175; Maui's fish-hook a sacred relic, I 134, II 176; speaking to early islanders, II 174, 224; stone at temple representing, II 174; tattooing introduced by, II 174, 175; a trickster, II 176; *see also* Tohe Tika, thunder-god, II 174

**(New Hebrides)** Maui-tikitiki: different forms of name in different islands, I 40–1, II 181, 182, 183, 220, 221

**(Aneiteum)** Moi-tikitiki: a leading god, I 40, II 81; a rain-god, II 181

**(Aniwa)** Matshiktshiki: a dreaded god, II 181; fishing up islands, I 39–40, II 181; incarnate in sea-serpent, I 39, II 181; and volcanoes, II 216; *see also* II 181, Maisiki, tutelar god of Futuna and Aniwa

**(Fate)** Maui-tikitiki, Maui-tukituki: the first man, II 182, 256; grandfather of Tamakaia the first man, I 40, II 182–3, 222; and Tamakaia, creator-gods, I 73, II 181; and Tamakaia, fishing up land, I 40, II 182, 256; and Tukituki, entrance to spirit-world, II 118, 256; as the woman in the moon, I 107, II 182

**(Futuna)** Amoshishiki, Mo-shiki-shiki: fishing up islands, I 40–1; freeing captives of cannibal god, II 183; *see also* II 181, Maisiki, tutelar god of Futuna and Aniwa

**(Mai)** Maui-tikitiki: fowls sacrificed at grave of, II 182

**(Tanna)** Ma-tikitiki: freeing captives from cavern of cannibal god, II 183, 209

**(Niue)** Maui[-tikitiki?]: lifting sky, I 44 and *n.* 3, II 88, 89, 178; living in Niue, II 255; Maui and his sister, the parents of Tiki, II 178; Maui (the son) bringing fire from below, II 198, 223; *tiki* term for incest, II 178–9

**(Paumotu)** Tiki: addressed by priest at funerals, I 276, II 152, 177; Ataranga the father of, I 36, II 222; bringing death to man, I 210, 276, II 152, 177; brother of the various Maui, I 36, II 222; creating and marrying the first woman, I 16, II 152; the father of men, I 106, 276, II 177, *see also* Maui as ancestor of men, I 68, II 177–8; the first man, I 15–16, 68 cf. 107, II 152, 177, 224; Hina the daughter of, I 103, 105; Hina the sister of, I 36, II 222; Hina the wife of, I 68, 107, *see also* Hina as wife etc. of Maui, I 107, II 177, 178; islands fished up by Tiki, I 36, II 229, 237, *see also* islands fished up by Maui, I 36, 68, II 177, 222, 229, 237; liaison with Hina, I 15–16, 107, II 152, 177; Maui killing Mauike, II 178; Rii the son of, II 177; sky raised by Maui[-tikitiki?], I 44, 68, II 229, 236–7; sun restrained by Maui [-tikitiki?], I 112

**(Rakahanga)** Maui-potiki: ascending to the heavens? II 200; and his blind grandmother Ina-mata-po, II 200–1, 203, 205; fetching fire? II 199–201, 203, 223; Ina the sister of, II 199–200, 203; Maui[-potiki?] fishing up islands, I 35, 38, 136, II 169

**Maui-tikitiki** (*cont.*)

(**Samoa**) *Ti'iti'i*, *Ti'i-talanga*: closing road to Mafui's place, I 325–6, 329, II 23, 156, 187–8, 252; earthquakes caused by, II 210–11; falling into the *Fafa* and dying there, I 146, 330, 354, II 156, 249; and *Fe'e*, conflicts between cults of, II 158, 249; *Fe'e* slain by, II 157; fetching fire, I 325, 338, 354, II 156, 184–5, 186, 187–8, 222, 249, 269; going from earth to *Pulotu* by the *Fafa*, II 156; going to *Sa-le-Fe'e* from Mafui's land, I 325, 339, II 187; helping *Losi* to fight *Tangaroa*-gods, II 157; islands fished up by Maui[*-ti'iti'i?*], I 33, II 227, 231; lifting sky, I 41, II 156, 227, 231; living in *Aleipata*, II 186; and Mafui, association with *Sa-le-Fe'e* or *hades*, I 354, II 156, 249, 269; *Savai'i* held up by *Ti'iti'i-a-talanga*, II 210–11; seeking the winds, I 145–6, 330, II 156; “son” of Mafui's sister, II 187, cf. I 325, II 156, 222; son of *Talanga*, I 325, II 184, 185, 186, 201, 222; son of *Tangaroa*, I 41, II 156, 227; stealing taro from *Tangaroa*, II 156–7, 185; trees blighted by smell of corpse of, I 146, cf. 354

(**Society**) *Ti'i*: boundaries guarded by children of, I 61; descended from the sun and the moon, II 166; descended from *Tane* and *Tangaroa*, I 63, II 166; descended from *Tangaroa*, I 60–1, 62, II 166; dropped into cavern of mountain? I 362, II 251, 273 cf. 274; dying, II 149; the first man, I 60, 62, 63, 65, II 166, 167, 224; first man, created by *Tangaroa*, I 65, II 149, 167; the first settler or discoverer, II 167; the first woman created by, I 60, II 166, 224; heron of, I 65–6, II 149; *Hina* the daughter of, I 60, 105; *Hina* and, the first human beings, I 61, 106, II 166, 224; *Hina* the mother of, I 60, 105, II 166; *Hina* the wife of, I 65, 105, II 149, 167, 224; man made mortal by, I 65–6, II 149–50, 167; Maui fetching fire, II 191–2, 202, 228; Maui fishing up islands, I 34–5, II 228, 233; Maui having nine heads, I 110; Maui “killing” and “resuscitating” *Tangaroa*, II 192; Maui raising sky (conflict with cuttle-fish), I 42, II 228, 233; Maui restraining sun, I 110–11, II 165; Maui [*-ti'iti'i?*] a deified priest? II 165–6; name for or attribute of *Tangaroa*, II 221, cf. I 64–5; and his sister, the parents of mankind, I 62, 63, II 166; see also the *Ti'i*, children of *Ti'i*, and the *ti'i*, departed spirits *below*

(**Tikopia**) *Me-tikitiki*: fishing up stones producing island, I 39

(**Tokelau**) *Tiki*, *Tikitiki*: one of the first men, I 18; and *Talanga* (f.), parents of *Lu*, I 18, 37, 44, II 180, 229–30, 237;

and *Talanga* (f.), parents of men, I 18, II 180, 224; and *Talanga* (*Taranga*), fishing up islands, I 37, II 229–30, 237

(**Tonga**) *Maui-kijikiji*, *Maui-kisikisi*: aiding *Tangaroa* the creator, I 56, II 162; assuming form of sea-lark, I 56; and his father, slaying carnivorous beasts, etc., II 162–3; fetching fire, II 162, 188–91, 222–3; fisher of islands, coming from *Lolofofua*, I 34, 353, 355, II 161, 250; fish-hook preserved as relic, I 34; fishing up islands, I 34, II 222, 227, 232; grandson of old Maui, II 188, 189, 202, 222–3; *Kijikiji* as younger son of Maui, II 189, 222; living under earth, II 160; Maui fishing up islands, I 33, II 227, 232; Maui fishing up the low islands, I 34, II 227, 232; no offerings made to, II 161; racing round *banana-pit*, II 162; restored to life by *nomu* leaf, II 190, cf. I 343, 352–3, 355, II 161–2, 250; *Sina* the sister of? I 105; son of *Maui-atalanga*, I 34, 42, II 162, 188, 189, 202, 222, 223; *Tongan* families derived from *Fijian* woman and, II 163

*Maui*, subterranean region for souls of dead (*Niue*), II 88, 91, 178, 254, 290, 291

*mauli*, *mauri*: ghost or departed spirit, (*Society*) I 203; *maui* term for life, associated with *Maui*-gods? (*Tonga*) I 201–2, II 161, cf. *Niue*, I 213, *moui*; organ of life and term for moon, (*Samoa*) I 199, 200; term for life, (*Sikaiana*) I 214; term for soul, (*Fotuna*) I 213; term for soul or mind, (*Paumotu*) I 209

Medicine, born of gods, (*Easter*) I 72

*Mehani Mt.* (*Meani*, *Tamahani*, *Te-meane*), *Ra'iatea*: *areoi* wearing flowers from, I 373; destination of souls? I 362, 368, 378; extinct crater, entrance to *Po*, I 362, 363, 374, 380–1, 382–3, cf. II 251, 272; *Ivi* a place of ghosts near, I 376 cf. 307 *n.* 2, II 35; mountain on N.W. side of *Ra'iatea*, I 360; point from which souls rose to sky or descended to *Po*? I 382–3; *Rohutu-noanoa* above? I 361, 362, 377, 379–80, II 272; *Rohutu-noanoa* near, I 360, 377, 379–80, II 272; *Rotui* a peak on rim of, I 363, 379, 381; souls of dead resorting to, I 360, 361, 363

*Mekemeke*, see *Makemake*

Memory-cords, (*Marquesas*) II 39, 64

Mercury (*Society*): and *Jupiter*, I 123, 124; name for, I 124; relationship to other stars, I 121, 124

*Me-tikitiki*, see under *Tikopia* under *Maui-tikitiki*



## INDEX

369

- Milky Way: associated with sharks and Tane, (Society) I 126–7; fish connected with, (Rarotonga) I 111 *n.* 3, 147; known, (New Hebrides) I 137; names for, I 136 (Fotuna), 134 (Marquesas), 131–2 (Samoa), 126–7 (Society), 132 (Tonga)
- Mind: same terms applied to soul and, (Paumotu) I 209, 210; seat, the belly or bowels, *see under those titles*
- Miru, Merou, etc., *see under* Society, Heaven *under* Heaven and Hell
- Miru (Aitutaki): eating souls of dead, II 33; goddess of underground hades, II 33; Tekauae outwitting, II 33–4
- Miru (Mangaia): all dying natural deaths going to, II 2, 16, 172; all souls not bound for skies going to, II 276; called “the Ruddy,” II 19; goddess of *Avaiiki* below, II 15, 171; Ngaru escaping clutches of, II 24; and her oven, swept away by deluge, II 24; souls on *bua* tree going to, II 16, 275–6; souls caught in whirlpool going to, II 11, 15, 275–6; souls of dead eaten by, I 378, II 2, 16, 19; souls eaten by, living again, II 2, 19, 142, 280 *n.* 1; souls sinking through sea with sun going to, II 7, 15, 275; souls submerged in lake of, II 16; stupefying souls with kava, II 19; taking Mauike’s place in *Avaiiki*? II 172–3; *see also* Muru (Rarotonga) *below*
- Miru (Paumotu): god of dead, II 80, 81; to be identified with deities of Hervey Islands, II 80–1; superior god of night, II 80
- Mitiaro, origin, (Hervey) I 67
- Moa, (Samoa) I 5, 6
- Moekilai-puka, god, (Ellice) II 102
- Moko, the king of lizards, (Mangaia) II 23–4
- Moko-fulu-fulu, possessing fire, (Niue) II 88
- Mokoiro and brothers, dragging up Mangaia, I 35, II 8
- Mokoroa-i-ata, fish, (Rarotonga) I 147, II 169
- Momo, one of first men, (Tonga) I 56, 57
- Months: beginning from first appearance of moon, (Society) I 183–4, 185; children of Oeroa Tabooa, (Tahiti) I 63; children of Tangaroa and year, (Tahiti) I 61, 170; and crabs, (Hervey) I 172, 173; the days the children of, (Tahiti) I 61, 170; intercalary months, etc., I 178 (Fotuna), 155, cf. 185 (Samoa), 166–8, 169–70 (Society), 179 (Tokelau); intercalation to co-ordinate lunar and solar time, (Society) I 183, cf. 169; lunar months and intercalary days, I 183–6; lunar year, but number of moons uncertain, (Easter) I 181; March a deadly month, (Hervey) I 172; May a deadly month, (Samoa) I 154; May the special time for feasts, (Society) I 171; moon dead during last days of month, (Society) I 115, 183–4, II 148, cf. Hervey, I 191, 192; named after god worshipped those weeks, (Samoa) I 154, 155, 156; not named after gods, I 177 (Fotuna), 173 (Mangaia), 175 (Marquesas), 179 (Rotuma), 180 (Tokelau), 166 (Tonga); one named after god? I 180, 181 (Easter), 167, 170 (Society); names connected with birds, I 176 (Paumotu), 155, 156 (Samoa); names connected with fish and fishing, (Samoa) I 154, 155; names connected with food-crops, I 173 (Hervey), 154, 155, 156, 157 (Samoa); names connected with stars, I 135, 136, 177, 178, 179 (Fotuna), 134, 174, cf. 175 (Marquesas); names for, common throughout group, (Samoa) I 155; November a month for feasts, (Samoa) I 155; number in year, I 180 (Easter), 177 (Fotuna), 172–3 (Hervey), 174–5 (Marquesas), 179 (Rotuma), 154–6 (Samoa), 63, 167–70 (Society), 179 (Tokelau), 166 (Tonga); *palolo* months, etc., *see under Palolo*; not regulated according to moon? (Rotuma) I 179; and seasons, I 154–81; Tahitian names for, derived from Samoa, I 168
- Moon: and arrival of *palolo*, I 161 (Fiji), 161 (Niue), 158–60, 162–3 (Samoa); ascending to, by smoke, (Samoa) I 94; ascending to, by tree, (Samoa) I 93–4; Atea the ancestor of, (Marquesas) I 68, II 242; birth of, (Samoa) I 4, 52; boy in, (Ellice) I 117–18; children the gift of, (New Hebrides) I 118; day due to demon’s swallowing, (Society) I 114; dead during last days of lunation, *see under* Months *above*; the dead Sina going to, (Samoa) I 100; destination of kings and priests, (Tokelau) I 117, II 100, 101, 292, 293; destination of souls, (New Hebrides) I 118, 121, 122, II 297, (Tokelau) I 117, II 100, 101, 292, 293, *see also* Manihiki, I 103, *Matavera*; devoured by gods from Tonga and Tahiti, (Mangaia) I 116, 307; earth the mother of, (Paumotu) I 15; eclipse of, *see under* Eclipses; figure dressed up to represent, (Aneiteum) I 104; having power over life and death, (Aneiteum) I 104, 118; Hina the goddess of or associated with, *see under* Hina (Ina, Sina); Hina restoring life to, (Society) I 65, II 149; idea of resurrection asso-

- Moon (*cont.*)  
 ciated with, (Niue) II 152; immortal, (New Hebrides) I 118; Kane, Ku and Lono creating, (Hawai'i) I 23; made by Maui before sun, (Manihiki) I 118, II 180; made before sun, (Ellice) I 117; Maui-tikitiki (tukituki) and her grandchild in, (New Hebrides, Fate) I 107, II 182; Mekemeke creating, (Easter) I 72–3; men erecting tower to reach, (Fiji) I 95; moonlight the child of Tangaroa and Hina, (Tahiti) I 99; native names for, I 96–7; navigation by stars and, (Society) I 137; nights after full moon spirits and thieves active, (Society) I 190, 395; origin of, (Society) I 62; phases of, *see under* Days of the Month; reached by canoe, (Society) I 99; Rona the woman in, (Paumotu) I 103; Rua-tupua the father of, (Society) I 120–1; and sun, associated with Kui ('Ui), I 105, 106; and sun, the eyes of Laukiti, (Ellice) I 117; and sun, the eyes of Vatea, (Mangaia) I 12, 13, 30, 115; and sun, once living on earth in E., (Aneiteum) I 104; and sun, parents of stars (Society) I 109, 115, 121–2, *see also* Marquesas, I 117, 134, shooting stars; and sun, in the second heaven, (Niue) I 104; and sun, the shades of Tangaroa, (Samoa) I 52; Tangaroa creating, (Society) I 60; Tangaroa ordaining the course of, (Samoa) I 52, 88, cf. Ellice, I 112; term for “heart” applied to, (Samoa) I 199; trees, etc., in, (Society) I 99, 100, 114; waning and waxing of, (Ellice) I 118, II 153, (Society) I 115, II 148, (Tokelau) I 117; white people supposed to live in, (Marquesas) I 117; as wife or daughter of sun, I 108–9; a woman, (Marquesas) I 102; woman beating cloth in, (Tonga) I 102; worshipped, (Aneiteum) I 104
- Morning star: guide to sailors, (Society) I 120; and hours of spirit-wanderings, (Paumotu) II 86, (Society) I 397; named after Atea? (Marquesas) I 134, II 242; sunshine sent by spirit in, (Ongtong Java) I 153; and term Fauroua, (Society) I 120, 122–3; Venus as, I 135 (Fotuna), 134 (Marquesas), 135 (Niue), 128 (Samoa); Venus and Jupiter associated with, (Society) I 122–3; west wind the brother of, (Samoa) I 145
- Mo-shikishiki, Moi-tikitiki, *see under* New Hebrides *under* Maui-tikitiki
- Moso, Samoan god, I 17
- Moths, souls of priests entering, (Marquesas) II 39, 52, 62, 67, 79
- Motoro (Mangaia): branch on *bua* tree for worshippers of, II 16, 18; god of the
- Ngariki, II 8, 12, 13; houses of, II 10, 11, 12, 13; tribal gods worshipped as well as Rongo and, II 17
- Motu-a-Hina*, heaven, (Niue) I 104, II 87, 88, 89–90, 92, 290
- Moumousia, god, (Ellice) II 102
- Mountains: due to Maui's haste, (Fotuna) I 37; men and god of dead derived from, (Samoa) I 17, cf. 3; souls leaping into sky from mountain, (Mangaia) II 20, 275; souls leaving for other worlds from, *see* Kiukiu (Marquesas) *and* Mehani Mt. (Ra'iatea); spirits of wood and, (Rotuma) I 70
- Mourua, chief, (Mangaia) II 7, 21
- Mumui (Tonga): ceremonies at funeral of, I 250–1; valuables buried in grave of, I 247; widows of, strangled, I 248
- Mumuki, the first man, (Hervey) II 167, 224
- Murder: and the origin of death, (Mangaia) II 151; in time of peace, a crime, (Niue) II 85, 138
- Muru (Rarotonga): catching souls in nets, II 25, 26, 30, 278; domain of, subterranean? II 278, 279; god of hades, II 30–1, 278; killing Tiki, II 150–1; male counterpart of Mangaian Miru, I 378, II 30, cf. 279; souls caught in nets of, eaten, II 27, 30, 278, 280; souls trying to reach west and escape from nets of, II 29–30, 279, 280
- Mussel, man derived from, (Samoa) I 5
- Nafanua: child of Si'uleo, (Samoa) I 334, II 213; goddess known in Samoa and Tonga, II 213; grandmother of Lofia, (Tonga) II 213, 228
- Name, called out to bring back soul, (New Hebrides, Futuna) I 229, 231–2
- Nets: catching soul with no gifts, (Marquesas) II 38, 53, 60; catching souls for under-world, II 104–5, 142 (Bukabuka), 16 (Mangaia), 79, 80, 81 (Paumotu), 25, 27, 30, 32, 278 (Rarotonga), *see also under* Fish-hooks; “sins” and fishing-net, (Aitutaki) I 268, 270; soul trying to escape to ocean from, (Rarotonga) II 25, 26, 29–30, 279, 280; for souls, different nets for chiefs and common people, (Bukabuka) II 105, 106–7; Tangaroa catching souls in (Aitutaki) II 34; used by priests to catch souls of men, (Bukabuka) II 104–5, 106, 138
- New Hebrides, origin of, I 40
- New Zealand, souls travelling northwards I 308

## INDEX

371

- Ngai, Ngaio, aiding Tangaroa, (Samoa) I 7, 48, 49
- Ngarangsau, ruler of *Limari*, (Rotuma) II 93, 94–5
- the Ngariki group, (Mangaia): burial-chasm, II 9, 11, 13, 16–17; descended from Rangī and Rongo, I 14, 11 8, 9, 171, 234; having own branch of *bua* tree, II 18, cf. 16–17; having own starting-places to nether-world? II 11–13, 13–14; living in the N.? II 13; all Mangaians worshipping the gods of, II 17, 234; Mautara section of, II 8–9; Matoro the god of, II 8, 12, 13, 17; Rongo the god of, II 17, 234
- Ngaru destroying Miru and her oven, (Mangaia) II 23–4
- Niehitu, funeral of, (Marquesas) II 43–4, 56–7
- Niue: inhabitants descended from Tongans, I 69; origin of, I 34, 37, 69, II 178; place in, called *Hawaiki*, I 293
- Niutao, origin, (Ellice) I 72
- Nukuhiva, and the ancestor sea-eel, (Marquesas) I 67–8, 81–2
- Nukunono, origin, (Tokelau) I 37
- Nungerain, *see* Inhungaraing
- Oatea, *see* Atea
- Oeroa Tabooa, (Tahiti) I 63
- Olosenga, origin, (Manu'a) I 55
- Omens: and the approach of bird etc., worshipped by sick man, (Society) I 396; comets as, (Samoa) I 113, 132; from cry of warrior ghost, (Society) I 359; divination from eclipse of moon, (Society) I 115; earthquakes as, (Samoa) II 187, 210; eclipses presaging death or calamities, I 118 (Ellice), 117 (Marquesas), 113 (Samoa), 117 (Tokelau), *and see* Hervey, I 116, god killing chief if no offerings made during eclipse; from evening star, (Samoa) I 128, 129–30; grasshoppers as, (Rarotonga) II 32; night-moths as, (Marquesas) II 39; shooting stars as, (Marquesas) I 207–8, 209, II 65, (Society) I 127; and sneezing, *see under* Sneezing; *tu'uar* of soul of dead announcing deaths, (Rotuma) II 94
- Ongtong Java: created by Lolo, I 39, 73, II 113, 201; idea of ancestral home connected with journeys of souls? I 311, II 113, 114–15, 295
- Ono, *see under* Marquesas *under* Rongo
- Oomarreo, god of seas, (Tahiti) I 59
- Opolu, getting fire from Tati, (Samoa) II 186, 209–10
- Orientation, head of corpse turned towards E., (Samoa) I 241
- Origin of Man, etc.: born of sand, (Paumotu) I 15; born of sand and a god, (Marquesas) II 176, (Society) I 62, 63; caused to evolve from earth by god, (Easter) I 72–3; created from earth, (Society) I 65, cf. Tiki creating first woman from earth, (Paumotu) I 15–16, (Society) I 60; created by Kane, Ku and Lono, (Hawai'i) I 23; created by Nungerein, (New Hebrides) I 40, 73; created by Tangaroa, (Society) I 65, II 149, 167; created by Tiki, (Marquesas) II 175; created by Vatea, (Paumotu) I 68, 107, II 177; created from *ti* plant, (Niue) I 69; created from vine stem, (Samoa) I 48; creation of first woman from first man, I 23 (Hawai'i), 68 (Paumotu); creation of first woman by Tiki, (Paumotu) I 15–16, II 152, (Society) I 60, II 166, 224; derived from creeper, *see* Rarotonga, I 66; derived from maggots coming from creepers, I 4–5, 7, 48, cf. 6, 8 (Samoa), 55–7 (Tonga); derived from maggots, in the case of slaves, (Tonga) I 58; derived from maggots, in cases of Upolu and Tutuila, (Manu'a) I 53, 54, 88; derived from mountains, (Samoa) I 3, 17; derived from mussel, (Samoa) I 5; derived from porcupine fish, (Ellice) I 72; derived from rock ancestress, (Tahiti) I 61, 62, 63; derived from rocks and earth, (Samoa) I 3, 5, 6, 8–9, 83; derived from rocks and fire, (Samoa) I 5; derived from rocks or stones, I 16–18, 78–80, 82–4; (Bukabuka) I 18, (Ellice) I 18, II 180, (Paumotu) I 15–16, (Samoa) I 16–17, 50–1, 86–7, (Society) I 17, (Tikopia) I 18, (Tokelau) I 18, II 180, *see also* Marquesas, I 15, II 175 *and* the ancestress-stone of Tonga, I 9–10; derived from vapour of rocks, (Ellice) I 45; derived from yams, (New Hebrides) I 73; descended from ancestor-creator? (Bukabuka) I 72; descended from Atea, (Marquesas) I 68, II 175; descended from gods, (Easter) I 72, II 180; descended from gods, in the case of chiefs, (Tonga) I 58; descended from Maui[-tikitiki?], (Aitutaki) II 173, (Mangareva) I 68, II 177–8; descended from Ouru and Fana, (Society) I 60; descended from Papa, (Rarotonga) I 14, cf. Mangaia, I 13–14; descended from sea-eel, (Nukuhiva) I 67–8, 81–2; descended from sea-serpent and earth, (Ellice) I 72, 82; descended from sky and earth? I 76, 79; (Ellice) I 16, (New Zealand) I 24, *see also* Mangaia, I 30, 80

**Origin of Man, etc. (cont.)**

and Marquesas, II 175; descended from Tane and Tangaroa, (Tahiti) I 63; descended from Tangaroa, I 3-4, 8 (Samoa), 61, 62, 63 (Society); descended from Tangaroa and Hina, (Society) I 60-1; descended from Tangaroa's children etc., except in Upolu and Tutuila, (Manu'a) I 53, 54, 88; descended from Ti'i, Tiki, etc., (Marquesas) II 176, (Paumotu) I 106, 276, II 177, (Society) I 62, 63, II 166, 224, (Tokelau) I 18, II 180, 224; descended from two original *ti'i* in Opoa, (Society) I 64-5, II 166; engendered through misalliances of gods, (Society) I 65; hatched from eggs of snipe, (Fiji) I 19; men and fish issuing from cave, (Marquesas) I 26, 79; men set on islands by gods, (New Hebrides) I 39, 40; produced from Tangaroa's back, (Society) I 19; shape like that of Kane, (Hawai'i) I 23; shape formed by Ngai, (Samoa) I 48, 49; soul etc., entering man, (Samoa) I 49, 51, 87, *see also* 48; woman derived from sweat of man, (Ellice) I 16, 45

**Origin of Man, the First Man, etc.:** Atea the first man to reach Marquesas, II 175; Foelangi and Telahi, (Ellice) I 72; Grown-from-nothing, husband of Tangaroa's daughter, (Samoa) I 6, 9; Huanaki and Fao first settlers, (Niue) I 69; Kava and Singano first men, (Tokelau) I 18, II 180; Kohai, Koau and Momo, first men, (Tonga) I 56, 57; Mauke, (Ellice) I 18, II 180; Mumuki, (Hervey) II 167, 224; Tamakaia, (New Hebrides) I 40, II 256; Te-erui, (Aitutaki) I 29; Ti'i, Tiki (Tee, O-tea), II 224; (Fate) II 182, 256, (Marquesas) II 175, (Paumotu) I 15-16, 68, II 152, 177, (Rarotonga) II 28, 167, 224, (Society) I 60, 62, 63, 65, II 149, 166, 167, (Tokelau) I 18, II 180; Tiki the first settler, II 174-5 (Marquesas), 167 (Society); Tiki as sister of first man, (Mangaia) II 4, 6, 22, 172, 224, 251-2

**Origin of World:** all things born of woman, (Marquesas) I 35; all things procreated by Atea, (Marquesas) I 68, II 242; all things procreated by gods, (Easter) I 72; all things procreated by Tangaroa, (Society) I 62-3, cf. 31; created departmentally by various gods, (Marquesas) I 67, cf. Tahiti, I 59, 62, II 163; creation by gods, I 46-73, 85-8; 72 (Bukabuka), 72-3 (Easter), 72 (Ellice), 66-7 (Hervey), 67-8 (Marquesas), 73 (New Hebrides), 69 (Niue), 73 (Ongtong Java), 68-9 (Paumotu), 73 (Reef), 70-1 (Rotuma), 47-55 (Samoa), 58-66 (Society), 55-8 (Tonga); derived from egg of Tangaroa, (Hawai'i, cf. Society)

I 19; derived from stones fished up by gods, I 18, 39 (Tikopia); derived from stones thrown down or fished up by Tangaroa, (Samoa) I 48, 49, cf. Tonga, I 56-7; due to goddess swinging lump of earth in cord, (Tahiti) I 64; dragged up from *Avaiiki* by Rangi, (Mangaia) I 14, 35; evolution of light, etc., *see* Light, sound, stability *above*; evolution myths, I 3-16, 79-85; 15 (Marquesas), 15-16 (Paumotu), 3-9 (Samoa), 11 (Society), 9-11 (Tonga), *see also* Mangaia, I 11-14; fished up by gods, I 32-41; 37 (Fotuna), 35 (Hervey), 38 (Manihiki), 35-6 (Marquesas), 39-41 (New Hebrides), 36 (Paumotu), 38 (Rakahanga), 33 (Samoa), 34-5 (Society), 39 (Tikopia), 37 (Tokelau), 33-4 (Tonga), 38 (Tongareva), 38 (Uvea); fishing-up of islands by gods other than Maui and Tiki, II 227-46; 228-9, 233-5, 241 (Hervey), 229, 235-6, 241-2 (Marquesas), 229, 236-7, 241, 242-3 (Paumotu), 229, 237 (Rotuma), 227, 230-1, 237-8, 240 (Samoa), 228, 232-3, 238, 240-1 (Society), 229-30, 237 (Tokelau), 227-8, 231-2, 238, 240 (Tonga), 230 (Tongareva), 229, 237 (Uvea); formed by god using waterspout, (Paumotu) I 36; from fire, (Samoa) I 6-7; from union of fire and water, (Samoa) I 4, 8, 85, II 158, 159; high islands due to Hikuleo and low to Maui, (Tonga) I 34, II 227, 232; island built up by god, (Ongtong Java) I 39, 73, II 201; islands formed from baskets of sand, etc., I 72 (Ellice), 67 (Mitiaro), 70, 71 (Rotuma); pushed up from *Havaiki*, (Marquesas) I 35, II 42, 65; pushed up from under sea by Maui, (Niue) I 37; produced by agency of Raitubu's glance, (Society) I 62; rock bringing forth all things, (Samoa) I 50-1, 86-7, cf. 4, (Society) I 62, cf. 17; rock and earth producing Samoa, I 6, cf. 5; a rock the foundation of all things, (Society) I 59, 62; rock in sea enlarged by first man, (Bukabuka) I 18, 72; rocks and islands produced by Fe'e, (Samoa) I 49, II 157; from smell, (Samoa) I 3, 8

**Orion:** Betelgeuse a pillar of the sky, (Society) I 121; constellation known, (New Hebrides) I 137; a guide to sailors, I 139 (Samoa), 125, 138 (Society); months named after, I 136, 177 (Fotuna), 134, 174 (Marquesas); name known only to few, (Society) I 126; names for, I 136 (Fotuna), 134 (Marquesas), 130 (Samoa), 125-6 (Society); relationship to other stars, (Society) I 121

**Oro (Society):** the *areoi* society founded by, I 392; the *areoi* worshipping, II

## INDEX

373

- Oro (Society) (*cont.*)**  
 164 *n.* 2, 174; belonging to highest order of gods, I 63; born of night, I 74, cf. I 290-1; certain days named after? I 187, 188, 189-90; children of, gods, I 60, 63; confused with Ru and Rongo, etc., I 189; Opoa the centre of cult of, I 60; scraping flesh off dead in *Po*, I 371, cf. 371-2, 376, 394, II 141; son of Tangaroa, I 60, 63, 108-9, II 232; Tangaroa-Oro cult superseding Tane-cult, II 232, 243-4
- Oromatua (Society)**: carrying away soul of dead, I 358; implored to restore sick, I 376; malevolent, I 376; from *Po*, killing the living, I 376; and preserved skull of relation, I 376; scraping flesh off soul, I 369, cf. 364; and *ti'i*, deified souls of the dead, I 394; *see also* Paumotu, II 79-80, the *matua-uru*
- Orre-orre (Society)**: certain days named after? I 187, 189; son of Tangaroa and god of winds, I 59, 141-2
- Oru**, goddess, (Tahiti) I 17
- Otaia**, father of gods, (Tahiti) I 17
- Oupu**, goddess of heaven, (Marquesas) II 41-2
- Ouroutatae**, *see* Urutaetae
- Ouru and Fana**, ancestors of man, (Society) I 60
- Pahuamo**, guardian of *Middle Havaiki*, (Marquesas) II 48
- Pakasia**, subterranean hades, (New Hebrides, Fate) II 121, 122, 297
- Palolo**: appearing at different times in different islands, (Samoa) I 159, 160, 161; appearing at intervals of six months? (Samoa) I 159, 160; appearing in March, I 161 (Amboina), 159, 160 (Samoa); appearing in Oct. or Nov., etc., I 161 (Fiji), 158-60 (Samoa); appearing in Nov. and Dec., (Samoa) I 157-8; arrival marking the beginning of the year, (Samoa) I 157-8, 165, 170; eaten in Tonga, I 161, 166; not found in certain groups, I 173 (Hervey), 168 (Tahiti), 179-80 (Tokelau); known in many parts of Pacific, I 161; and the land crabs, (Samoa) I 162, 163; months named after, I 177 (Fotuna), 173 (Hervey), 155, 156-7 (Samoa), 167, 168, 169 (Society), 179 (Tokelau); months named after, and time of appearance, (Samoa) I 157-8, 163; moon and time of arrival of, I 161 (Fiji), 161 (Niue), 158-60, 162-3 (Samoa); observances connected with the catching of, I 161, 164 (Fiji), I 163-4 (Samoa); season named after, I 176 (Paumotu), 164 (Samoa); visible for two or three days, (Samoa) I 158-9, 160-1, 163, cf. Fiji, I 161
- Papa**, *see under* Earth
- Papalangi**, *see under* Foreigners
- Paparangi**, *see under* Paumotu, Heaven, *under* Heaven and Hell
- Paumotu Islands**: Fakalava formerly called *Havaiki*?, I 293, 306; later homes of migrants to, called *Havaiki*, I 305-6; Mangarevan king making war on Easter Island, I 222; origin, I 16
- Pena**, (Society) I 359-60
- Pere (Paumotu)**: volcano-god, II 214-15, 237, 238; *see also* Hawai'i and Rarotonga, II 215
- Perseus**, (Society) I 121, 126
- Pigeons**: addressed in chiefs' language, (Samoa) I 200, 201; bird of Tangaroa, connected with Atiu, I 66-7; derived from stone, (Tonga) I 9-10; doves and moon, (Society) I 100; hour of day named after feeding-time of, I 186 (Samoa), 187 (Tonga); lava regarded as transformed doves, (Samoa) I 8; Maui associated with, II 193, 194, 205 (Mangaia), 192 (Society); months named in connection with, (Samoa) I 155, 156; red pigeon of Tane, (Mangaia) II 193
- Pigs**: for god and soul of dead, (Marquesas) I 273; islet derived from head and teeth of pig, (Rotuma) I 71; originally given by Mapuhanui, (Marquesas) I 273
- Pili**, (Samoa) I 4, 9, 83
- Piscis Australis**, (Society) I 121
- Plantain (Society)**: emblem of peace and friendship, I 254-5; used in connection with death ceremonies, I 254-5, cf. 256
- Pleiades**: called *Mataliki*, *Matariki*, etc., I 136 (Bukabuka), 136, 177 (Fotuna), 133 (Hervey), 136 (Manihiki), 134 (Marquesas), 135? (Niue), 131 (Samoa), 126 (Society), 132? (Tonga), 136 (Tongareva), *see also* Paumotu, I 135; deified chief Li'i connected with, (Samoa) I 131; Hina's husband turning into, (Hawai'i) I 103; known, (New Hebrides) I 137; known to commoners as well as to chiefs, (Society) I 126, 138; marking the two divisions of year, I 173 (Hervey), 126, 172 (Society), cf. Marquesas, I 174, 175; month named after, I 136, 177 (Fotuna), 134, 174, 175 (Marquesas); relationship to other stars, (Society)



**Pleiades** (*cont.*)

I 121, 126; S.E. gales due to? (Paumotu) I 135; Tane associated with origin of, (Hervey) I 133; worshipped, I 136 (Bukabuka and Tongareva), 173 (Hervey), *see also* Manihiki, I 180 and Society, I 172

**Po**: as an ancestral home, I 316, II 260–1, cf. I 301; confusion between *Havaiki* and, I 316, 317–18, II 260–1; and *Havaiki*, known as destinations in eastern groups, I 314–15; and *Havaiki*, not known as destinations in western groups, I 313–14; name originally applying to place on earth? I 315; not identified with places on earth in historical times, II 262; and origin of sky-cult, II 262–3; as a region of darkness, I 89, 290, 301, 315, cf. 316, II 260; in skies above, *see under* **Po** (Society) *below*; in skies, dark, I 89–90, 291, II 263; in skies, destination of deified chiefs? II 261, 262–3 (Society); in skies, the home of major and minor gods, I 77, 89–90, 290–1, II 261, 262; in skies, visible sky the lowest stratum of, I 77, 90, II 261; as a state of chaos and darkness, I 73, 74, 76, 89, 288–9, 316, II 260; subterranean, 189, 290, II 261, 262, 263; surrounding the earth, I 77–8, II 261, 262–3

**Po?** (**Fotuna**), higher gods hidden in darkness, I 291

**Po** (**Hervey**): confused with *Avaiiki*, I 291, 299, 315, II 1, 276–7, 279; gods dwelling in night, (Mangaia) I 291; hell, dark and horrible, (Rarotonga) II 28, 32, 129, 279

**Pofafa** (**Manihiki**), Hell?: destination of common people, II 104, 294, 324; formerly an ancestral home in east? I 310–11, II 104, 294, 324; a pleasant place but without food, II 104

**Po** (**Niue**), Hell: ancestral home in the west and hades? I 301, II 87, 91, 291; a dark place, II 87, 89, 91, cf. I 301, 314; destination of evil-doers, II 87, 89–90; region called *Maui* to be identified with? II 91, 290, 291

**Po** (**Paumotu**): containing both heaven and hell, II 72, 73; hades in, dark and having lakes of fire, etc., II 73–4, 77, 254, 287, 288, cf. I 106; hades in low part of, II 73, 76, cf. 77; Hina goddess of hades in, II 73–4, cf. I 106, II 177; home of gods, I 291, II 73, cf. I 106; Miru superior deity of hades in, II 80–1; night, the world of invisible things, I 291, II 73; raised part of, a paradise, II 73, 76, cf. 77; souls shown way to heaven in, at price of gift, II 80; souls suffering

hunger etc. in hades in, II 73, 254; subterranean, II 72, cf. 76–7, 287–8; 'Ui-the-blind associated with hades in? II 79–80, 81

**Po-kino** (**Paumotu**), Hell: at bottom of precipice, II 74; a burning furnace, II 74, 77, 254, 288; a deep slough, II 74, 77, 288, cf. muddy pond for wicked, II 73; meaning of name, II 74, 288; soul for which no rites performed going to, II 74, 76, cf. 78–9, 132, 288; souls of wicked going to, II 72, 76, 77; subterranean, II 72 cf. 74, 76, 77, 287–8, 289

**Po-porotu** (**Paumotu**), Heaven: destination of the good, II 72, 76, 77; a division of **Po**, II 72; equivalent to **Pulotu**? II 74; souls for which rites performed going to, II 74, 76, 78, 287, cf. 132; subterranean heaven for good, II 72, 76, 77, 287, cf. 137–8

**Po** (**Samoa** and **Tonga**): confused with **Bulotu**, (Tonga), I 290 n. 1, 299, 350–1, II 270, 272 cf. Samoa, II 269; *Havaiki* and, not known as spirit-homes, I 313–14; known as world of darkness? (Tonga) I 290 n. 1, 299, 313 n. 1, 349–50; mentioned in creation myth, (Samoa) I 52, 313

**Po** (**Society**), Hell: *Airaua*, name for hades or, I 376, *see also* *Arooe*, I 372–3, 378–9; as ancestral home in W. or N.W.? II 274–5, 323; association with Ra'iatea, I 362–3, 380–1; a cavern at top of Ra'iatean mountain, I 362, 380, 383, II 250–1, 272–3, cf. I 375, 381; chief going to, I 363, 386, 392; darkness or night associated with, I 90, 290, 360, 368, 370, 373, 376; dead relations in, prayed to, (Society) I 376; deified spirits dwelling in, I 364, 384; destination of lower classes, I 389, II 272; eating of souls in, I 364, 370, 385, 393, cf. 368–9, II 140–1; entrance to, extinct crater in Ra'iatea, I 362–3, 374, 380–1, 383, II 251, 272–3; entrance to, at *Taya-hoboo*? I 378, 383, 386, 393, *see also* rock entrance to region of fire, II 192; general destination of souls, I 290, 360, 364, 377, 392; general **Po** or burying-place in Ra'iatea, I 362, 380; gods living in, I 299, 364, 368, II 141; gods and souls going to, at end of year, I 370, 391–2; great gods born of night, I 74, 290–1, 368; great gods in highest stratum of celestial **Po**, I 89–90, 290–1, II 285–6; *harre-po* or "night," I 368, cf. 378; hell, a miserable place, etc., I 364, 370, 393, II 127, 272; hell, a place of punishment, I 376; hell, *see also* lake on Ra'iatean mountain, I 363, 371–2, 381, 383, II 272–3; not revolting or terrible, I 369; Oro scraping flesh off

## INDEX

375

- Po (Society), Hell** (*cont.*)  
 dead in, I 371, cf. 371–2, 376, 394, II 141; river of Tangaroa in, I 362–3, 374, 380–1, cf. 383; in skies above, I 80–90, 290, 291, 295, II 261, 262–3; soul of living man dwelling in, (Society) I 204, 209, 220, 373, 394; souls in, might be transported to heaven, I 365, 369 cf. 370, 387, 391–2, II 99, 131; the source and destination of souls, I 299, 368, II 274–5, 323; subterranean, I 363, 374, 383, II 272–3, 274; Taihe dying at bottom of cavern of, *see under* Taihe; Tangaroa living in, I 290; Tangaroa the ruler of, I 363, 374–5, cf. 394; the *tee* living in, I 373; the two *Rohutu* as regions in, I 376; ‘Ui-the-blind associated with, I 375, 381, 383, 393, 394, II 273
- Poepoe**, paradise in sky, (Mangaia) II 20
- Points of compass and winds**: I 152? (Easter), 151? (Fotuna), 148–9 (Hervey), 150 (Marquesas), 153? (New Hebrides), 151?, 177 (Paumotu), 146? (Samoa), 142–5 (Society), 152 (Tikopia), 152 (Tokelau), 146 (Tonga)
- Polaris**, a pillar of the sky, (Society) I 121, 125
- Pomare I (Tahiti)**: and funeral of Mahow, I 257, 259–61; and human sacrifice, I 219–20; soul invoked by widow and priests, I 397; spirit appearing after death, I 395, 397
- Pomare II (Tahiti)**: death of wife of, I 253; fearing his father’s ghost, I 397
- Pomare chiefs**, gods of, (Tahiti) I 142, 188
- Po-porotu, Po-poroutou**, heaven, *see under* Paumotu *under* Po
- Porcupine fish**, man derived from, (Ellice) I 72
- Porpoise**: body of drowned man turning into, (Samoa) I 322; god Vatea allied to, (Mangaia) I 12
- Possession**: *fanaua* possessing women, (Marquesas) II 49–50; soul of chief possessing chief, etc., (Tikopia) II 111; soul of dead man possessing priest and acknowledging sins, (Tokelau) I 280; spirits entering woman, (Paumotu) II 82
- Potoro**, god, (Marquesas) II 41
- Prayers**: in connection with death, etc., (Society) I 255, 371; of the “corpse-praying” priest, (Society) I 253–4; during eclipses, *see under* Eclipses; at feast, at great and family *marae*, (Society) I 365, cf. Marquesas and Society, I 370; for fine weather or rain, (Samoa) I 16–17, 155; generally addressed to Tane, (Tahiti) I 61; high-priest addressing Tiki at funerals, (Paumotu) I 276, II 152, 177; praying to god to reveal thief, (Society) I 205; priest praying *oromatua* to restore sick, (Society) I 376; priest praying to Tane, (Paumotu) II 241, (Society) I 142; of priests at funerals, I 273 (Marquesas), 284 (Ongtong Java), 259 (Society), *see also* prayer to goddess at funerals, Ongtong Java, II 113; of priests, enabling chiefs to become gods, (Society) I 371; of priests, transporting soul to paradise, (Society) I 365, 369; Tama prayed to during illness, (Paumotu) II 81; Tangaroa prayed to, (Rotuma) II 237
- Priests**: ascertaining cause of death, (Society) I 360; bidding soul of dead to go, (Marquesas) II 43; catching souls in nets and causing death, (Bukabuka) II 104–6, 138; chief priest using special stone axe, (Rotuma) I 279; and chiefs, deified at death, (Marquesas) II 39, 49, 52, 68; communicating will of gods, (Society) I 219, II 164; exposed corpses tended by, (Society) I 252; fed on glutinous food in order to retain wisdom, (Rarotonga) I 206; gods communicating with, in dreams, I 223 (Ellice), 222 (Marquesas), 219 (Society); guarding *marae*, (Society) I 396; head priest obtaining favourable wind, (Hervey) I 147, cf. New Hebrides, I 153; human sacrifice on death of, (Marquesas) I 272; inspired, I 219 (Society), 356 (Tonga); knowledge of stars, I 126, 138 (Society), *see also* I 137, Tupia steering by stars; moths as omens of death of, (Marquesas) II 39; offering prayers, *see under* Prayers *above*; priest invoking god from tree, (Fiji) I 164; priest’s soul rowed to heaven by enemy victims, (Marquesas) I 274, II 40, cf. 49, 53; same individual a carpenter and, (Aitutaki) I 29; selecting sailing dates, (Ellice) I 140; souls of dead instructing, (Paumotu) II 84; souls of, going to sky, (Marquesas) II 38–9, 49, 51, 52, 53, 55, 67, 68, 79, 280–1, 282, 284–5, cf. 62, *see also* Ongtong Java, souls of *makua* going to sky, II 113, 115, 295; souls of kings and, going to moon, (Tokelau) I 117, II 100, 101, 292, 293; stream sacred to kings and, (Mangaia) II 4
- Procyon**, a pillar of the sky, (Society) I 121
- Property for the dead**: I 234–5; buried with corpse, I 283 (Easter), 281 (Ellice), 283 (Fanning), 266 (Hervey), 282 (Manihiki), 277 (Niue), 279 (Rotuma),

- Property for the dead (*cont.*)  
 239 (Samoa), 247 (Tonga), 281 (Tongareva); cord to aid ascent into other world, (Paumotu) I 275; and exchange of gifts at funerals, I 235; family bringing gifts to dying man, (Samoa) I 200, 201; gifts to pay for ceremonies, etc., I 235; objects for the use of soul, I 266 (Hervey), 285 (New Hebrides), 277 (Niue), 275 (Paumotu), 279 (Rotuma), 240 (Samoa), 251, 253 (Society), 247 (Tonga), 281 (Tongareva); objects laid beside body "repaid," (Hervey) I 266; objects laid on corpse buried with it, (Hervey) I 266; souls of utensils etc. accompanying the dead, I 271 (Marquesas), 200 (Samoa); weapons, I 235; 285 (Duff), 271, 272 (Marquesas), 285 (New Hebrides), 239 (Samoa), 251 (Society); no weapons or food in grave, (Tokelau) I 280; *see also* Food and other offerings
- Property of the dead: burnt, I 275 (Paumotu), 251, 253 (Society); destroyed, I 234-5, 236; destruction of personal belongings of queen, (Tahiti) I 253; destruction of plantations, etc., I 286 (New Hebrides), 278 (Niue), 275-6 (Paumotu), *see also* Samoa, I 240-1; utensils used by deceased buried, I 277 cf. 278 (Niue), 239, 240 (Samoa), 251, 253 (Society), *see also* Marquesas, I 271
- Prophets, (Society) II 164-5
- Pulotu*, *see under* Samoa, Heaven *under* Heaven and Hell
- Puna and Iro, (Aitutaki) I 267-8, cf. II 34
- Punishment and reward: II 130-43; admission of warriors to heaven a reward, II 135-6; conduct affecting fate of soul, (Easter) II 109, 110, 294, (Marquesas) II 42, 44, 56, 57, 58, 137, (Niue) II 87, 88-9, 90, 138, cf. 290, (Paumotu) I 93, II 72, 73, 76, 77, 78, 286, 287, 288, 289, (Samoa) I 335, 339-40, (Society) I 363, 371, 387, (Tonga) I 345, 346, 348; conduct not affecting fate of soul, (Mangaia) II 1-2, (Society) I 364-5, 367, 387, (Tonga) I 345, 346; degree of happiness in heaven varying according to merit, (Fotuna) II 95, 99, 292, cf. Society, I 368, 387; "goodness" and "badness" connected with funeral feast or lack of it, (Ellice) I 388, II 78-9, 101-2, 103, 132-3, 138, 293, cf. Aneiteum, II 116-17, 118, 138, *and* Samoa, I 340, II 136; no future punishment, (Marquesas) II 40, 42-3, 56, (Society) I 367, 368, 370, 387, (Tikopia) II 111, (Tokelau) II 101, (Tonga) I 344, 346; propitiation for sins, *see under* Sins; punishment not feared because gods appeased during life, (Society) I 370, 387, II 131; punishment not feared because sacred laws observed, (Society) I 370, 387, II 130, 137; punishment and purification of souls, (Society) I 361, 368-9, 374, 384, 385, 387; no punishment, but soul earning good burial suffering less in hades, (Fate) II 120, 122, 133, cf. 296; purification and the eating etc. of souls, (Society) I 364, 365-6, 367-8, 368-9, 385-6, 388-9, II 140-4, 280n.1, cf. Mangaia, II 20, 141-2, *and* Marquesas, II 60-1; religious conduct of deceased important, II 136-9, 266; (Aneiteum) II 117, 118, 138, 296, (Bukabuka) II 105, 106, 138, 294, (Fate) II 121, 122, (Fotuna) II 95, 97-8, 138, 292, (Paumotu) II 73, 75, 77-8, 81, 83-4, 138, (Society) I 361, 364-5, 368, 373, 374, 386-7, 388-9, II 136-7; souls going to places of judgment and expiation, (Fotuna) II 96, 99, 132, cf. Rarotonga, II 27-8, 30-1, 127, 278, 279-80, *and* Society, I 360, 368-9, 386-7; souls of just alone becoming gods, (Society) I 372, 387, II 137
- Puvai going to spirit-world, (Mangaia) II 6, 15, 18, 22, 35, 252
- Ra (Mangaia): sun-god, living in *Avaiiki*, I 99, II 192, 202; sun-god, passing through holes at horizon, I 115-16, II 22
- Ra (Society): three days named after, I 187, 188
- Rahu (Rotuma): appointing first *sou*, I 70-1; contest with Tokaniua, I 70; creating Rotuma and establishing constitution, etc., I 70-1; grave of, I 71; a Samoan, I 70, 71
- Ra'iatea (Society): centre of Tangaroa-Oro cult, I 379; *Havaiki* the ancient name for, I 32, 293, 304, cf. Paumotu, I 305; the Hawai'i created by Tangaroa? I 31-2; hell associated with cavern or lake on mountain in, *see under* Society *under Po*; migration to New Zealand starting from, I 308; Opoa the home of the *ti'i*, progenitors of men, I 64-5, II 166; Opoa the place where first woman created, I 60; original home in Society group of Tangaroans, I 32, 304; *Rohutunoanoa* near mountain in, I 360, 361, 362, 377, 379-80, 382, II 272, 274
- Rain: Atea the ancestor of, (Marquesas) I 68, II 242; child of Tangaroa and Hina, (Society) I 61, 99; falling from lakes in sky, (Marquesas) I 93; Moitikitiki the god of, (Aneiteum) II 181; prayers for, in October, (Samoa) I 155; prayers and offerings to rain-god,

## INDEX

377

- Rain (*cont.*)  
(Samoa) I 16–17; sent by souls of chiefs, (Manihiki) II 104; sun providing, (New Hebrides) I 118; Tangaroa god of, (Rotuma) II 237
- Rainbow: child of Tangaroa and Hina, (Society) I 61, 99; man going from sky to earth by, (Hervey) I 102
- Raitubu, aiding Tangaroa to produce world, (Society) I 62
- Raka: god of winds, (Mangaia) I 13, 147, II 169; Maui-tikitiki fetching winds from, (Rarotonga) I 149, II 169; parent of winds, (Paumotu) I 151
- Rakahanga: Maui[-tikitiki] fishing up, I 35, 38–9, 136, II 169; natives derived from Rarotonga, I 224, 310
- Rangi (Mangaia): ascending and descending by Tiki's hole, II 22, 171, 251; born in *Avaiki* below, II 171, 234; death unknown in early part of reign of, II 151; dragging Mangaia up from *Avaiki*, I 14, 35, II 8, 228; grandson of Rongo, I 14, 35; name heading both lists of kings, II 234, 241; Ngariki group descended from Rongo and, I 14, II 8, 9, 171, 234; as substitute for Maui-tikitiki, II 228, 230, 233–4, 241
- Rank and the after-life: each class having different destination, (Ongtong Java) II 112, 114–15, 295; fate of soul not depending on rank or conduct, (Mangaia) II 1–2, 128, 323; fate of soul partly depending on rank and wealth? II 103, 293 (Ellice), 122, 296 (Fate), 130, 292, cf. 95, 98 (Fotuna); heaven not confined to upper classes? (Aitutaki) II 34–5, (Samoa) I 326, 333, (Tonga) I 344–5, cf. 351; large loops enabling chiefs to escape Vaerua? (Bukabuka) II 106–7, 294; servants not going to same place as chiefs? (Society) I 368, 386; soul of chief might go to hell? (Marquesas) II 43, 44, 56–7, 58, (Society) I 363, 386, 392; soul in other world enjoying same rank as in life, I 368, 386, 389 (Society), 356, cf. 345 (Tonga); souls not led by chief unable to go to *Avaiki*, (Mangaia) II 4; upper classes going to pleasanter destination, II 325–6, cf. Samoa, I 340; upper classes and rich going to heaven, and common people going to hell, II 128, 133–4, 266–7, 303, cf. Table, II 318–21, and *see also* under Heaven and Hell; upper classes going to sky and lower classes going underground, II 317, cf. Table, II 318–21, and *see also* under Heaven and Hell; upper classes going to superior heaven and good plebeians to inferior one, (Paumotu) II 73, 76, 77, 286–7, 288, 289, *see also* Marquesas, II 282, 286, cf. 47, 66, and Niue, II 90, 290, and Tokelau, II 101, 292–3; *see also* Punishment and reward
- raro* ('a'o, lalo): "below" and "above" for "west" and "east," I 295; (Hervey) I 299, II 1, 276; conception of term, I 294–6; confusion due to meanings of "below" and "west," I 292, 294–5, II 260; (Hervey) II 276–7, 279, (Marquesas) I 295, 301, II 285, (Society) I 295, II 260, 274; no confusion between "west" and "below," (Samoa) II 268–9, (Tonga) I 352 *n.* I, II 271; meaning "north," (New Zealand) I 292, 295, 296, 308; meaning "south" in Mangareva? I 176; originally meaning "land" or "mountain"? I 294–5
- Rarotonga: fished up by Maui and Ru, (Paumotu) I 36; fished up by Maui-tikitiki, (Rarotonga) I 35, II 222; Manihiki and Rakahanga colonized from, I 224, 310; migration to New Zealand from, I 308; migration from Samoa to, I 305, cf. 304; migration from Tahiti to, I 304, 305; origin of man from creepers? I 66; the three main groups in, II 24
- Rat: an ancestor of man, (Samoa) I 8; idea of death associated with, II 152 (Niue), 146 (Ongtong Java); soul of chief appearing as, (Marquesas) II 41; soul in hades turning into, (Fate) II 120
- Rata: and the consulter of the stars, (Hervey) I 139–40; descendants surviving flood and building tower, (Paumotu) I 94–5; genealogy of, (Hervey) II 170
- Raupa burial cave, (Mangaia) I 220–1, II 9, 11, 13
- Red Cave or Ana-kura, (Mangaia) II 3, 4, 5, 6, 11, 13, 14 *n.* I, 18
- Red feathers: in connection with death ceremony, (Society) I 254–5; on corpse, to prevent soul's being eaten, (Society) I 376; on fish-hook of 'Ui-the-blind, (Society) I 375, II 80; ghost of dead appearing with, (Society) I 360; land of red parrot feathers in *Avaiki*, (Mangaia) I 13; *maro-uru*, the emblem of divinity and fire, (Marquesas) II 173
- Regulus, associated with *palolo* month, (Fotuna) I 136, 177
- Rehu, instigated by dead to kill relations, (Ongtong Java) II 114
- Re-incarnation, souls of dead animating other bodies, (Marquesas) I 207, 208–9, II 42, 51
- Rena, god, (Rarotonga) II 170

- Reptiles:** Tangaroa the father of fish and, (New Zealand) 1 24; worshipped by sick man, appearing before death, etc., (Society) 1 396
- Resurrection, or restoration of soul:** girl restored to life after three days, (Niue) 11 153; Hina immortal, born again, (Marquesas) 11 151–2; Hina restoring life to moon, stars, sea, trees, etc., (Society) 1 65, 11 149; Hina trying to secure resurrection of man, (Society) 1 65–6, 11 148–50, 167; Maui restoring Tangaroa to life on third day, (Rarotonga) 11 151, 195, *see also* Society, 11 192; Maui trying to regain immortality for man, (Paumotu) 1 210, 11 144, 152, 177; moon associated with idea of resurrection, (Niue) 11 152; *nonu* tree restoring dead to life, (Tonga) 1 343–4, 352–3, 355, 11 161–2, 190, 250, cf. Rakahanga, 11 200, 205, *and* Rarotonga, 11 194–5, 205, *nonu* fruit restoring sight to Ina; resurrection of souls eaten by gods, *see under* Souls eaten; Sina brought to life again after three nights, (Samoa) 1 200, 11 147–8; Sina's husband dipped in water of life, etc., (Samoa) 1 334–5, 339, 11 148; Sina's soul restored by sun, (Samoa) 11 148; soul of boy brought back by burning stick, (Futuna) 1 232; soul restored to life if told to go back by friendly spirit, (Mangaia) 1 221, 11 15, 16, cf. Rarotonga, 11 25, 30; soul striking tree near *Fafa* restored to body, (Samoa) 1 330–1, 352; soul treading live branch of tree restored to life, (Rarotonga) 11 25–6, cf. 30, 150–1, 169–70; soul of woman sent back to body by Tiki, (Rarotonga) 11 28; souls restored to life entering semi-corrupted bodies, (Society) 1 373, 375, 394, 11 144; souls of sick sent back to bodies by god, (Paumotu) 11 81, 83; Tekauae sent back to life by Miru, (Aitutaki) 11 33
- Reva, god of paradise, (Bukabuka)** 11 105, 106, 142
- Rii (Li'i):** associated with dogs, (Paumotu) 1 131, 11 177; separating sky from earth, (Society) 1 42, 131; son of Tiki and Hina, (Paumotu) 11 177; as substitute for Maui-gods, (Society) 11 228, 230, 233, 241; swallowed by fish and deified as Pleiades, (Samoa) 1 131
- Rocks, see under** Stones, etc.
- Rohutu-namu-namua, see under** Society, Hell under Heaven and Hell
- Rohutu-noanoa, see under** Society, Heaven under Heaven and Hell
- Romatane (Society):** keeper of *Rohutu-noanoa*, 1 365, 376, 394; name of stone in *marae*, 1 376; priest or god at *Rohutu-noanoa* admitting or excluding dead, 1 376
- Rona (or Nona), cannibal woman in the moon? (Paumotu)** 1 103
- Rongo (Lono, Ono):** no cult of Tane and, in Samoa, 11 231; and Roo, Rou, etc., 1 189, 11 233, 240; not worshipped by upper classes only, 11 332
- , Lono (**Hawai'i**): a creator-god, 1 23; dissipating darkness, 1 23; existing from beginning, 1 23, 74; living in the heavens, 1 23; representing sound, 1 22–3, 75; the same as Rongo, 1 23
- Rongo (Hervey Islands):**
- (**Aitutaki**): mast named after, 1 29
- (**Mangaia**): ascending from nether-world, 11 20, 141–2, 171; day of, favourable for getting fish and victims, 1 192; day of month sacred to, 1 191; god associated with paradise? 11 171 *and n.* 1; god of the Ngariki, 11 17, 234; grandsons dragging up Mangaia, 1 14, 35, 11 8, 171, 228, 234, 241; human in form, 1 14; *marae* near Tiki's hole, 11 22; *marae* near western cliff, 11 4, 20, 277; Ngariki group descended from Rangi and, 1 14, 11 8, 9, 171, 234; and Tane, patrons of dances, 1 191; Tangaroa leaving Mangaia to, 11 234; Tangaroa and, sons of Vatea, 1 14, 80, 11 234–5; tribal gods worshipped as well as, 11 17, 234; war-god, 11 20, 22; war and peace made with permission of, 11 234; warrior souls eaten by, passing to heaven, 11 20, 141–2, 171 *n.* 1, 275, 277
- (**Rarotonga**): ancestor of Makea family, 1 14; god of one wind, 1 150; Maui taking fish to sky to, 1 147, 11 169; at naming of Maui-tikitiki, 11 168; and others, challenging Maui, 11 170; son of Papa and Te Tumu, 1 14; and Tane, creator-gods? 1 67
- , Ono (**Marquesas**): to be identified with Rongo, 1 22 *n.* 2; prominent in legends, 11 176; representing sound, 1 20, 22, 75; ruling in the sky with Atea, 1 20, 21
- Rongo (Paumotu):** son of earth and sky, 1 27–8, 80
- Rongo-ma-tane (New Zealand):** not associated with sound? 1 25; the father of cultivated food, 1 24; son of sky and earth, 1 24, 80
- Rongo-ma-tane (Rarotonga):** formerly god of paradise, 11 27 *n.* 2, 170; and others, challenging Maui, 11 170
- Roo, Ro'o (Society):** and the birth of winds, 1 141; certain days named after? 1 189; and Rongo, Ru, etc., 1 189, 11 233



## INDEX

379

- the Root-of-all-existence, (Mangaia) I 12, 81–2, II 8
- Rootane, god of peace, (Society) I 59
- Rootui, Rotui, (Society) I 363, 379, 381
- Rotuma: created by Rahu of Samoa, I 70, 71; fished up by Maui-alonga, (Fotuna) I 37; Hataua the home of Rahu, I 70, 71; house in, built to reach sky, I 95; Rahu appointing first king of, I 70–1
- Roua (Society): confused with Tangaroa, I 64, 99; and earth, the original parents, I 64; identified with the sun, I 99
- Rouanoua (Society): son of Tangaroa and brother of Roo, I 141
- Rouanuku, Ruanuku: connected with wind, I 150, 151 (Paumotu), 150 (Rarotonga); at naming of Maui-tikitiki, (Rarotonga) II 168; and others, challenging Maui, (Rarotonga) II 170; son of Papa, (Rarotonga) I 14; *see also* Society, I 59, Ruanu, a bald god
- Roua Touboua, Rua-tupua-nui (Society): ancestor of sun, stars, etc., I 64, 120–1, 126, 127; names of the solstices connected with? I 171, cf. Paumotu, I 176
- Ru (Lu, etc.): a later god than Maui, II 257, 339; and Rongo, Roo, etc., II 233, 240; as substitute for Maui-gods, II 230; not worshipped by upper classes only, II 332
- Ru (Hervey Islands):  
 (Aitutaki): raising sky, I 43, II 229; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 235, 240–1  
 (Mangaia): father of Maui, I 43, II 192, 223, 228; hurled into sky by Maui, I 43, II 228; living in *Avaiki*, I 42, II 192, 202; pumice stone deriving from bones of, I 43; sky raised by Maui and, I 42–3, II 20–1, 228; as substitute for Maui-tikitiki, II 230, 234, 240–1; the supporter of the heavens, I 43, II 192  
 (Rarotonga): descendant of Tangaroa, II 168; and the raising of the sky, I 43, II 168, 228; as substitute for Maui-tikitiki, II 230, 235, 240–1
- Ru (Paumotu): and Maui, fishing upland, I 36, 229; a sea-god? II 236; as substitute for Maui-tikitiki, II 230, 236–7, 240–1; water associated with, II 198, 214
- , Lu (Samoa): genealogy, I 6, 9, 83
- Ru, Rou (Society): certain days named after? I 188, 189; confusion with Rongo, etc., I 189, II 233, 240; raising sky, I 42, II 228; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 230, 233, 240; winds and earthquakes due to Maui and, I 141, II 164, 208, 214, 228
- , Lu (Tokelau): drawing up islands, I 37, II 229–30; naming the winds, etc., I 152; raising sky, I 44, II 229; son of Tikitiki and Talanga, I 18, 37, 44, II 180, 229–30, 237; as substitute for Maui-tikitiki, II 230, 237, 240–1
- Ruahinetamaumauuahi, fire - goddess, (Society) II 192
- Sagittarius: red star with two faces, (Society) I 120; Southern Crown in, (Fotuna) I 136
- Salefu, supporting the earth, (Samoa) II 211
- Salevao, Saolevao (Samoa): brother of Si'uleo, I 5, 336; catching souls of sleepers, I 216–17; connected with origin of Samoa, I 5, cf. 6; in form of dog, pursued by Ti'iti'i, I 146 and *n.* I
- Samoa: born of fire and water, I 8; born from rock? I 6, cf. 5; brought forth by Fe'e, I 49; drawn up by Lu, (Tokelau) I 37; fished up by Maui and Ru, (Paumotu) I 36; fished up by Maui-alonga, (Fotuna) I 37; Manu'a and the Tangaroans, etc., *see under* Manu'a; Maui[-ti'iti'i] fishing up, with Manu'an hook, (Samoa) I 33, II 227, 231, (Tonga) I 34; meaning of name, I 6, cf. 5; natives not having log-books, I 313–14; one of the children of night and day, I 52; Rotuma created by man from, (Rotuma) I 70, 71; Tangaroa creating islands and man, I 47–54, cf. 7–8; Tangaroa or his son, etc., fishing up, (Samoa) I 33, cf. 6, II 227
- Samoa, Tonga, and Fiji, called *Avaikiraro*, (Rarotonga) I 293, 304
- Saolevao, *see* Salevao
- Sara, Sara-tau (Fate): god of dead, II 118–19, 122–3; *see also* Solatau
- Saturn, I 135 (Fotuna), 121 (Society)
- Sau and Fine, (Samoa) II 147–8
- Savai'i: *Avaiki* identified with, (Hervey) I 29; the *Avaiki* made by Vatea? (Paumotu) I 68; creation by Tangaroa, (Manu'a) I 52–3, 54; a later home named after original *Havaiki*, I 293, 303–4; peopled from Manu'a, I 53, 54, 88; supported by Ti'iti'i, II 210–11; and Upolu, fished up by Tangaroa, I 33, cf. 49; and Upolu, formed from stone thrown from sky, I 49
- Savea Si'uleo (Samoa): born in Falealupo, I 17, 336; descended from rocks, I 17; devouring his brothers, I 336; as god of dead, following Fe'e, I 337, 338, 349,

- Savea Si'uleo (Samoa) (*cont.*)  
 II 155, 156; god or king of *Pulotu*, I 333, 337, II 155; going to rule over *Pulotu*, I 336, 355; half human, half fish, I 337, cf. 336; Nafanua the child of, I 334, II 213; pilot of, guiding spirit-ship, I 333; relations of, living in *Pulotu*, I 336, 354; Salevao the brother of, I 5, 336; seeking land on other side of sky, I 336, II 268, 309; souls of chiefs "pillars" of house of, I 337, 395; taking Fe'e's place in *Sa-le-Fe'e?* I 338, 350; Tangaroan god, later than Maui and Fe'e, I 349, II 155–6
- , Havea Hikuleo (Tonga): brother of Tangaroa and Maui, I 349, 353, II 161, 231, *and see* Table, I 10; decreeing calamity for neglect of ceremonies, I 218; descended from Maui, I 349; II 161; descent from slime, stone, etc., I 9–10; earthquake god, I 348, II 212, 227–8, *and see* meaning of his mother's name, I 10; going to rule over *Bulotu*, I 10–11, 353, 355, II 161, 250; having a tail, I 348; high islands thrown down from sky by, I 34, II 227, 232; living in *Bulotu*, I 218, 348, II 270; living in cave under Tongan Islands, I 346, 348, 350, II 270; and Nafanua and Lofia, I 213, 227–8; the same as Savea Si'uleo, I 348, 353; souls of dead posts in house of, I 348; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 227–8, 230, 231–2, 240; tied by rope held by Maui and Tangaroa, I 348, II 161, 212, 227–8; tree sending canoe for soul at order of, I 344, II 270
- Scorpio: Maui's fish-hook becoming tail of, (Mangaia) I 35 cf. 38, 133, (Manihiki and Rakahanga) I 136, (Marquesas) I 134, II 176; names for stars in, (Samoa) I 130–1; twin children fleeing from earth now stars in, I 133 (cf. Castor and Pollux); Vatea's fish-hook becoming tail of, (Hervey or Tongareva) I 38, 132–3
- Sea: born of a woman after land pushed up, (Marquesas) I 35; breakers, the children of Raka, (Mangaia) I 147; brought forth by rock at Tangaroa's command, (Samoa) I 50, 86–7; child of Tane and Tangaroa, (Tahiti) I 63; child of Tangaroa and rock, (Society) I 62; created by Oomarreeo, (Tahiti) I 59; created by Tangaroa and Hina, (Society) I 59; due to miscarriage of goddess, (Marquesas) I 68; existing before land, I 78; 37, cf. 69 (Niue), 39, 73 (Ongtong Java), 48, 78 (Samoa), 11, 63? (Society), 18, 78 (Tokelau), 55, 132 (Tonga); flooding the earth, etc., I 4, 7, 8 (Samoa), 11 (Society); Hina the goddess of, (Society) I 61; Hina re-suscitating, (Society) I 65, II 149; a level plane, (Tahiti) I 91; Matariki arranging earth and, (Bukabuka) I 18, 72; peopling of, (Samoa) I 51; spirits living in or by, (Ongtong Java) II 114; storm wave called Tane-ere-tui, (Mangaia) I 147; time reckoned by tides, (Society) I 190; Tuaraatai god of, (Society) I 59
- Sea-serpent, etc.: and earth, parents of mankind, (Ellice) I 72, 82; man descended from sea-eel, (Marquesas) I 67–8, 81–2; Matshiktshiki incarnate in, (New Hebrides) I 39, II 181; raising sky, (Ellice) I 45, 72, 82; Si'uleo associated with sea-eel, (Samoa) I 337, cf. 336, *see also* Tonga, I 348, Hikuleo having a tail; *tupapau* appearing as fiery serpent, (Tahiti) I 396; worms, eels and serpents connected with idea of procreation, I 81–2
- Seasons, I 178 (Fotuna), 173 (Hervey), 174–5 (Marquesas), 177 (Niue), 176 (Paumotu), 164–5 (Samoa), 170–1 (Society), 166 (Tonga)
- Self-wounding: I 280 (Fotuna), 265 (Hervey), 282 (Manihiki), 271 (Marquesas), 279 (Rotuma), 239 (Samoa), 251 (Society), 283 (Tikopia), 280 (Tokelau), 247 (Tonga), 281 (Tongareva), 280 (Uvea); blood shed at funeral fight purifying deceased, (Paumotu) I 276; burning flesh, I 279 (Rotuma), 239 (Samoa), 283 (Tikopia), 280 (Tokelau), 247 (Tonga), 280 (Uvea); object to propitiate deceased? I 233–4
- Sepo, Samoan god, I 17
- Shadow, term for spirit and, (Samoa) I 198
- Shark: god healing person bitten by, (Paumotu) II 73; god of Niatobutabu, I 356–7; Milky Way associated with Tane and, (Society) I 126–7; souls of dead assuming form of, I 397 (Society), 356 (Tonga); Tahiti originally a shark, (Society) I 35
- Shell: soul reaching lowest stage of hades becoming, (New Hebrides, Futuna) II 115; used by gods for scraping souls, (Society) I 370–1, 371–2, 376; *see also* Conch shell
- Shell-fish, casting their "skins" and men dying, (Samoa) II 146
- Siamese-twin goddesses, (Samoa, Tonga) II 213, cf. I 334
- Silence: after killing human victims, (Marquesas) I 273; on taboo days, (Society) I 258, 261, 262
- Sina, *see under* Hina (Ina, Sina)
- Singano, one of the first men, (Tokelau) I 18, II 180

## INDEX

381

- Sins: causing death, I 236; (Aitutaki) I 268?, (Bukabuka) II 105–6, (Paumotu) I 276?, (Society) I 254, 255; causing death, blood shed at ceremonial fight appeasing manes of deceased, (Paumotu) I 276; causing death, deceased admitting responsibility for, (Tokelau) I 280–1; causing death, question of resentment of deceased, (Society) I 254, 255–6, 269, *see also* Niue, I 278, II 92, Samoa, I 241, 269, Tokelau, I 281, dead man begged to go in peace; deceased asked to take away illness, etc., (Samoa) I 241, 256–7, *see also* 268–70; of deceased, infecting persons touching corpse, (Society) I 254; and disease causing death, buried and dissociated from survivors, (Society) I 253–4, 256, 269; propitiation for, rites, offerings, etc., II 58–9, 130–4, 139–40, 266; (Bukabuka) II 105, (Marquesas) II 59–60 cf. 68, 131–2, (Paumotu) II 78 cf. 74, 132, (Rarotonga) II 31, 58–9, 131, 279–80, (Society) I 365, 369 cf. 370, 371, 387, 391–2, II 99, 131, *see also* Fotuna, II 132 and Ongtong Java, II 133; of relation of deceased, causing death? (Society) I 254, 255; scooped with fishing-net, (Aitutaki) I 268, 270; sickness and, sent to sea in canoe, (Society) I 255, 256, 269, cf. Aitutaki, I 268, 269, 270, 271, New Hebrides, I 287, and Tikopia, I 284
- Sirius: creator of chiefs of earth and sky, (Society) I 124; enjoying special consideration, (Samoa) I 130; month associated with, I 136, 177 (Fotuna), 134, 174 (Marquesas); name known to few, (Society) I 124; names for, I 133 (Hervy), 130 (Samoa), 124 (Society); relationship to other stars, (Society) I 121, 124, 127
- Sister: begging dead man to take away diseases, (Samoa) I 241; chiefs marrying each other's sisters, (Society) I 259
- Si'uleo, *see* Savea Si'uleo
- Sky: birth of the heavens, (Samoa) I 52; brought forth by rock at Tangaroa's command, (Manu'a) I 50, 86–7; the child of Tane and Tangaroa, (Tahiti) I 63; convex and resting on horizon, (Society) I 42; created by Kane, Ku and Lono, (Hawai'i) I 23; created by Matariki, (Bukabuka) I 18, cf. 72; created by Tangaroa and Hina, (Society) I 59; created by Teorahā, (Tahiti) I 17; created by Tetoo and Haka, (Marquesas) I 67; created by Vatea, (Paumotu) I 44, 68, II 229, 236–7, 242; dark strata in, I 37 n. 2, 77, II 263; destination in, generally a paradise, II 127, 258, cf. 265; destination in, question of origin, II 262–5; destination of souls, *see* Easter, Ellice, Fotuna?, Mangaia, Manihiki?, Marquesas, Niue, Ongtong Java, Paumotu, Society, Tikopia, Tokelau *under* Heaven; destinations in, *see under* Destinations of souls; different districts of island having different skies, (Marquesas) I 92–3, II 308, 311; different islands enclosed in own atmosphere, (Tahiti) I 91, II 308, 311, 313–14; a distant land, inhabited, (Marquesas) I 93, 150; distant voyage called a visit to the heavens, (Samoa) I 90, II 307; dome-shaped cover of earth, I 77, II 264, 307; (Marquesas) I 91, (Samoa) I 90, (Society) I 91, (Tonga) I 90–1; dragonflies severing cords binding earth and, I 45; each stratum of the world having own sky, (Paumotu) I 93, II 72, cf. 76; and earth the original parents, I 76, 79; (Ellice) I 16, (New Zealand) I 24, *see also* Mangaia, I 30, 80 and Marquesas, II 175; and earth, the parents of great gods, I 80, *see also* Rotuma, I 44; and earth, separated by Rii, (Society) I 42, 131, II 228, 233; and earth, separated by their sons, (Ellice) I 45, (Marquesas) I 25–6, II 229, 236, (New Zealand) I 24–5, (Niue) I 25, (Rotuma), I 44, *see also* Paumotu, I 15, 26–7, 27–8; enclosing islands like hollow cone, (Society) I 91, II 307; gods living in different strata in, I 77, II 261, 262–3; (Samoa) I 52, (Society) I 89–90, 290–1, II 285–6; the heavens of the gods distinct from *Rohutu-noanoa*, (Society) I 361–2; held in place by stars, (Society) I 91, 121; joining sea at or beyond horizon, (Society) I 91, II 307, 309; light ensuing after separation of earth and, I 76, 77; light let in by splitting open, (New Hebrides) I 28; the lowest heaven the visible sky, I 77, 90, II 261; man returning to earth from, by rainbow (Hervy) I 102; men erecting building to reach, I 95 (Fiji), 94–5 (Paumotu), 95 (Rotuma); ninth heaven, council-meeting of gods in, (Samoa) I 52, 88; ninth heaven, home of highest gods, (Samoa) I 52; ninth heaven, Sina's soul taken to, (Samoa) I 200; oven for cooking souls in, (Rarotonga) II 32; passage by horizon from heaven below to heaven in? (Paumotu) II 83, 288; pinned to earth by cuttle-fish, (Society) I 42; producing clouds, sun, etc., (Society) I 62; reached by canoe voyage to horizon, (Marquesas) II 41, 52, 63; reached by climbing up from horizon, (Marquesas) I 93, II 39, 52, 62–3, 264; reached by cloud, (Marquesas) II 41, 63, 67; reached from mountain, *see under* Mountains; reached by smoke of fire, (Samoa) I 93–4; reached by souls in

Sky (*cont.*)

form of birds, (Marquesas) II 39, 52, 62, 67, 79, cf. Paumotu, II 72, 79, 86, 142, 286, 288, souls destined for hell escaping in bodies of birds; reached from trees, I 95 (New Hebrides), 93–4, 101–2 (Samoa), *see also* Tonga, I 94; and sea, existing before land, I 78 (Samoa), 18, 78 (Tokelau); a sea, stars sailing in canoes on, (Society) I 120, 123; several heavens in, (Hawai'i) I 23, (Hervey) I 89, II 21, (Niue) I 103–4, II 88, (Paumotu) I 89, (Samoa) I 52, 89, (Society) I 31, 89, 375, (Tonga) I 89; Si'uleo going to land on other side of, (Samoa) I 336, II 268, 309; solid, I 77; (Marquesas and Tonga) I 91, *and see also* Paumotu, I 27, 93, sky having hard crust; solid, adzed by Maui, etc., I 43, 91 (Mangaia), 45, 91 (Manihiki); solid vault of stone, (Mangaia) I 43, 91, II 20; souls leaping into, from mountain, (Mangaia) II 20, 275; stars and the various valleys in, (Society) I 121, 124, 126; tenth heaven dark, opening into *Po*, (Society) I 89–90, 291, cf. 295; tenth heaven home of greater gods, (Society) I 89–90, 290–1, II 285–6; touching horizon, strangers taken for gods, (Marquesas) I 91, 92, II 308; traffic between earth and, by way of horizon, (Samoa) I 90, II 307; voyagers coming from behind, (Society) I 91, II 308; voyagers coming through hole in, (Huahine) I 91, II 308; white men breaking through, (Samoa) I 90, II 307, 311; white men gods coming from, (Tokelau, Uvea) I 93; winds blowing from valleys in, (Marquesas) I 93, 150

Sky, raising and supporting of: I 41–5; 45 (Ellice), 42–3 (Hervey), 45 (Manihiki), 44 (Niue), 44 (Paumotu), 44 (Rotuma), 41–2 (Samoa), 42 (Society), 44 (Tokelau), 42 (Tonga); raised by first man, (Niue) I 44; raised by Maui-atalanga, (Tonga) I 42, II 162, 222; raised by Maui[-tikitiki?], (Aitutaki) I 43, II 229, 235, (Mangaia) I 42–3, II 20–1, 228, (Manihiki) I 45, (Niue) I 44 *and n.* 3, II 88, 89, 178, (Paumotu) I 44, 68, II 229, 236–7, (Society) I 42, II 228, 233; raised by Maui-tikitiki (Ti'iti'i), (Rarotonga) I 43, II 168–9, 222, 228, 235, (Samoa) I 41, II 156, 227, 231; raised by Ru or Lu, (Aitutaki) I 43, II 229, 235 cf. Rarotonga, I 43, II 168, 228, 235, (Society) I 42, II 228, 235, (Tokelau) I 44, II 229–30, 237; raised by Ru and Maui, (Mangaia) I 42–3, II 20–1, 228; raised by sea-serpent, (Ellice) I 45, 72, 82; raised and supported by Tane, (Paumotu) I 15, 27, 28, 44, II 229; raised by Tane and supported by Tangaroa, (Paumotu) I 44,

II 229, 236–7; raised by Tangaroa, (Rotuma) I 44, II 229, 237; raised by vapour from rocks, (Ellice) I 45; supported by pillars becoming stars, (Society) I 91, 121; supported by plants or trees, I 45; 42, cf. 43 (Hervey), 44 (Niue), 41–2 (Samoa), 42, 91 (Society); supported by Ru, (Mangaia) I 42–3, II 192; supported by the Teefererei, (Tahiti) I 17; supported by Tuite'e-langi, (Samoa) I 41, cf. 50, 51, 52, 86–7, II 227

Smell: all things derived from, (Samoa) I 3, 8; “bad smells” born of gods, (Easter) I 72; bad smells in hell? (Society) I 371, 393

Smoke, etc.: “incense” offered to corpse, (Marquesas) I 272; Maui raising sky because inconvenienced by, (Paumotu) I 44; men reaching sky by means of, (Samoa) I 93–4; mist or, in evolution myths, I 8 (Samoa), 63 (Society); vapour from rocks making sky rise up, (Ellice) I 45; vapour from rocks producing man, (Ellice) I 45

Snake: soul in hades turning into, (Fate) II 120; spirit of dead man returning as, (Rotuma) II 95

Sneezing: associated with curses, (Melanesia) I 224, 225, 228; associated with return of soul, I 227; 221 (Hervey), 225 (Melanesia), 226 (New Guinea); comparable with convulsions of possessed? I 227–8; during sleep, dangerous, (Fiji) I 225, cf. 227; evil or good omen, (Tonga) I 219, 230, cf. New Guinea, I 226; evil omen, (Fiji) I 225; evil omen, causing abandonment of journey, I 217, cf. 230 (Samoa), 219 (Tonga); evil omen to others as well as to sneezer, I 229–30; expressions used in connection with, I 221 (Hervey), 224 (Manihiki), 224–6 (Melanesia), 223 (Niue), 217 (Samoa), 220 (Society), 219 (Tonga); ideas underlying beliefs as to, I 226–31; indicating that sneezer's name is being called, (Melanesia) I 225, cf. 227, 228–9; indicating that someone is speaking of sneezer, I 224 (Melanesia), 217, 228–9 (Samoa); meaning that soul is being drawn away, (Melanesia) I 225; near corpse, etc., disastrous, (Fiji) I 225–6; sneezer's soul going to ancestral home? (Manihiki) I 224, 310; by step-father, (Melanesia) I 224, 225, 228

Snipe, *see* Tuli or snipe

Society Islands: called *Avaiki-runga*, (Rarotonga) I 293, 304; fished up by Maui, I 36 (Paumotu), 34–5 (Society); fished up by Tangaroa, (Society) I 35;

## INDEX

383

Society Islands (*cont.*)

fished up by Tino-ta'ata, (Society) I 35;  
migrants going from Samoa to, I 303-4,  
II 275; origin of man in, I 60-5; peopled  
from Opoa, Ra'iatea, I 64-5; peopled  
by Tahitians, I 64

Solatau, guardian of hades, (Fate) II 121,  
*see also* Sara, Sara-tau

Sorcerers, (Society) I 372, 373

Souiftunga, (Rotuma) I 70, 71

the Soul: absence causing death, (Buka-  
buka) II 105, (Marquesas) II 46,  
(Rotuma) I 223; absence and return of,  
and fainting, (Fiji) I 229, (Hervey)  
I 221, II 15, (New Hebrides, Futuna)  
I 229, 231-2, (Samoa) I 216; animals  
endowed with souls, I 200-1 (Samoa),  
206 (Society); animals etc. without  
souls, I 206-7 (Hervey), 203 (Tonga);  
annihilated if touching certain stone or  
flower, (Society) I 361, 363, 385-6,  
II 125; breath leaving body later than,  
(Marquesas) II 46; breathed into man  
by Tangaroa, (Samoa) I 49, *see also*  
breath of dying legend-keeper inhaled  
by son, (Society) I 205-6, and dying  
father transmitting wisdom by breath-  
ing on son, (Samoa) I 200, 205; of  
common man, dying with body, II 125;  
(Samoa) I 339, 351, (Tonga) I 345, 351,  
II 140, 270; of common man, remain-  
ing on earth feeding on ants, etc.,  
(Tonga) I 345, 351, II 270; com-  
municated by god to man etc. in form  
of fire? (Society) I 206; concrete,  
carried to gods in basket, etc., (Samoa)  
I 200; of dying, carried off by family  
god, (Paumotu) II 75, 132; of dying,  
carried off by the *oromatua*, (Society)  
I 358, cf. 360, *see also* Paumotu, II 79-  
80, *matua-uru* taking souls to under-  
world, and Mangaia, II 7, 21, spirit of  
dead child begged to come and fetch  
mother; of dying, carried off by spirits,  
(Reef) II 111, (Samoa) I 321, 323, 333;  
of dying, drawn out of head by god,  
(Society) I 358; each being and utensil  
having soul, (Marquesas) I 209, *see also*  
spirits of mats accompanying soul of  
dead man, (Samoa) I 200-1; each  
person having more than one, (Pau-  
motu) I 210, 211-12, 395, II 84; entering  
the wooden *ti'i* in *marae* after death,  
(Society) I 204, 366, 367, 395-6; female,  
and body male, (Marquesas) I 207, 208,  
211, II 45, 65, 151-2; in form of insect,  
etc., caught in priests' nets, (Bukabuka)  
II 105; idea of immortality ridiculed,  
(Society) I 372, 394; immaterial and  
immortal, I 365 (Society), 356 (Tonga);  
immortal, (Fotuna) I 213, (Marquesas)  
I 207, II 42, (Paumotu) II 72, (Society)

I 203 cf. 204, 360, (Tokelau) II 101;  
immortal in the case of the slain,  
(Mangaia) II 21; "immortality" not  
enduring for ever, II 125; 119 (Fate),  
115 (Futuna); issuing from mouth at  
death, (Marquesas) II 41, 46, 69, cf.  
Society, I 358; leaving body at death,  
(Paumotu) II 81, 83, (Samoa) I 198,  
(Tonga) I 202; leaving body before or  
after death, (Marquesas) II 46, 69; of  
living, dwelling in *Po*, (Society) I 204,  
209, 220, 373, 394; of living man,  
existing in star, (Marquesas) I 207-8,  
208-9, 212; one soul remaining with  
body after death, (Paumotu) I 210, 212,  
395, II 84, cf. Tokelau, II 100; outward  
form, (Tonga) I 202; priest extracting  
soul from body, (Tongareva) II 107; re-  
sorting to place where intestines buried?  
(Society) I 259; restoration of, *see under*  
Resurrection, etc.; resurrection of, but  
not of body, (Society) I 372, (Tokelau)  
II 101; return to body causing recovery  
from illness, II 105, 106 (Bukabuka), 15,  
16 (Mangaia); return of, indicated by  
sneeze, (Hervey) I 221; return of,  
wakening the body, (New Hebrides,  
Futuna) I 231; seated in heart, (Tonga)  
I 203; seated in stomach, (Marquesas)  
I 209; seated in stomach or bowels,  
(Paumotu) I 210, cf. II 143-4; separa-  
tion from body involved by death,  
(Marquesas) I 207, 208, II 151, cf. 46;  
shadow of man associated with?  
(Samoa) I 198-9, cf. Society, I 205; of  
sleeper, caught when wandering, cause  
of death, (Samoa) I 216-17, cf. Rotuma,  
I 223; of sleeper, leaving body for  
spirit-world, I 223 (Ellice), 220 (Hervey),  
222? (Marquesas), 220 (Society), 218  
(Tonga), cf. Paumotu, I 222, and *see*  
*also* Samoa, I 216, sleep due to soul's  
wish to visit heavens; of sleeper, wan-  
dering, etc., I 220 (Hervey), 223 (Mani-  
hiki), 226 (New Guinea), 231 (New  
Hebrides), 216 (Samoa); spirit of living  
man distinguished from spirit of dead,  
(Fate) I 231; spirit of living man re-  
sembling his person, (Society) I 205;  
Tangaroa asked to animate universe  
with, (Society) I 62; Tangaroa en-  
dowing man with spirit, heart, etc.,  
(Samoa) I 51, 87, 199; Tangaroa en-  
dowing stone-mother with, (Samoa)  
I 7; terms for spirit or, I 213 (Fotuna),  
213 (Niue), 209 (Paumotu), 198-9  
(Samoa), 203, cf. 204 (Society), 201-2  
(Tonga)

Souls of the dead: appearance, (Mangaia)  
II 3, 5, 6, 21 and *n. 5*, (Marquesas) II 46,  
(Samoa) I 341, (Society) I 373, 395,  
397-8, (Tonga) I 356, cf. 347; ap-  
pearing in human form, etc., (Mar-  
quesas) II 44, 50, (Paumotu) II 86



Souls of the dead (*cont.*)

(Rotuma) II 95, (Samoa) I 322, 341, (Society) I 359; appearing like mist, (Marquesas) II 44, cf. 36–7, (Samoa) I 340, cf. Mangaia, II 20, 21 *n.* 5, souls of warriors as clouds; appearing like sparks of fire, (Samoa) I 340, 341, 342, cf. Society, I 360, dead man appearing with flame, *and* Mangaia, II 6, 21–2, souls not luminous at night; assuming form of animal revered in life, (Society) I 396; assuming forms of animals, etc., *see under* Animals, etc.; association with stars, *see under* Stars; becoming *vehine hae* if rites and sacrifices omitted, (Marquesas) II 47, 68; before departure, called *tii-tii* or “starved,” (Mangaia) II 4; biting throats of living, (Tonga) I 356, cf. Tongareva, II 107; buried in common earth, not going to heaven, (Society) I 358; causing death or illness, *see under* Death and Illness; communicating with living in dreams, *see under* Dreams; congregating at the *Fafa*, (Samoa) I 330, 341, 342; corpse and soul experiencing same feelings, (Paumotu) I 210, 212, *see also* Society, I 373–4, 394–5, mutilation of corpse affecting soul, *and* Mangaia, I 220–1, soul suffering with body; dangerous until after dissolution of body, (Paumotu) II 85–6, cf. Tongareva, II 107; dead from cemeteries more hideous than returning spirits, (Paumotu) II 85; destination depending on funeral feast or lack of it, (Ellice) I 388, II 101–2, 103, 132–3, 293, cf. Aneiteum, II 116–17, 118, 138; destination depending on performance or non-performance of rites, (Paumotu) II 74, 76, 78–9, 132, 288; distinguished from souls of living, (Fate) I 231; driven away by fire? *see under* Fire; driven off by guns, (Marquesas) II 43, (Samoa) I 341; the drowned not resting, (Samoa) I 321, 322; feared, (New Hebrides) II 116, (Marquesas) I 207, II 40, 44–5, (Niue) II 92, (Paumotu) I 210, II 85, (Samoa) I 340–1, (Society) I 396, 397, 398; feared at night, (Fate) II 121, (Funafuti) II 102, (Marquesas) II 45, 50, (Samoa) I 321, 341–2, cf. 330; food, *see* Food in spirit-worlds; food offerings for, *see that title*; generally well-disposed towards relations, (Mangaia) II 3, (Society) I 397; green like leaves, (Samoa) I 342; in hades, turning into animals, etc., *see under* Animals, etc.; not harmful? (Marquesas) II 47, (Samoa) I 321; haunting burial-places, (Mangaia) II 3, 19, (Paumotu) II 84, (Samoa) I 341; haunting certain spots, II 104 (Manihiki), 100–1? (Tokelau);

haunting former homes, (Mangaia) II 3, 4, (Marquesas) II 46, (Samoa) I 341, 342, (Tongareva) I 282, II 107; haunting home till feast made? (Marquesas) II 44–5; haunting the *marae*, II 7, 21 (Mangaia), 107 (Tongareva); having same passions as in life, (Society) I 397; indicating presence by whistling, (Tonga) I 217–18, 356, cf. Marquesas, II 50, Paumotu, II 85; inspiring the living, *see under* Inspiration; instigating deity to kill relations, (Ongtong Java) II 114; killing the living, (Paumotu) II 84, (Samoa) I 340–1, (Society) I 376, (Tonga) I 356; killing those desecrating graves, (Paumotu) II 85; laid, by burying insect etc. embodying the soul, (Fotuna) II 100, (Niue) II 92, (Samoa) I 322–3, cf. 198, *see also* Paumotu, I 210, term *tupua*; laid, by deepening grave till water came, (Tongareva) II 107–8; life on earth before final departure, (Mangaia) II 3, 4, (Marquesas) II 36–7, (Society) I 361, 362; malevolence of, directed against oppressors, (Niue) II 92–3; malevolent without volition, (Niue) II 92, 93, cf. Paumotu, II 86 *and* Tonga, I 356; malignity mollified by night-vigil of relations, (Paumotu) II 85; offerings admitting to heaven, *see* Food and other offerings; Pena returning as bird and killing friend, (Society) I 359–60; as pillars or posts in house of god, (Samoa) I 337, 395, (Tonga) I 348, cf. Society, I 371, 395; Ra’iatea the abode of, (Society) I 398; recognizing former friends in hades, (Fate) II 119, (Society) I 373; regarded as female in a general way, (Marquesas) I 207, II 65, 151; returning to inflict punishment, (Fate) II 120, (Society) I 367–8, 385, II 141; seen in sleep and sometimes by persons awake, (Marquesas) II 46–7; and sins causing death, etc., *see under* Sins; sometimes helpful to survivors, (Paumotu) II 84, (Samoa) I 341; sometimes seen in daytime, II 86 (Paumotu), 107 (Tongareva); soul causing evil if rites not performed, (Paumotu) II 86; soul of chief ordering relation not to omit funeral rites, (Marquesas) I 222, II 40, 56, 59–60, 132; soul commanding performance of rites to transport it to paradise, (Society) I 369, II 131; soul of dead woman carrying off soul of lover, (Tonga) I 218–19; soul deserving good burial less unhappy in hades, (Fate) II 120, 122, 133, cf. 296; soul of grandfather transmitted to body of grandchild, (Marquesas) I 208, II 44; soul of man eaten raw not returning? (Marquesas) II 41, 65; soul of man killed by arrow returning? (Reef) II 111, 129;

## INDEX

385

Souls of the dead (*cont.*)

soul of Veetini returning, (Mangaia) II 4–5; souls acting as agents of gods, (Samoa) I 341? (Society) I 365, 367–8, 385, cf. Austral, II 108, 142; souls of chiefs having same attributes as gods, (Tonga) I 345, 356; souls of chiefs returning from *Bulotu*, (Tonga) I 356, 357; souls deified returning, (Easter) II 109, (Society) I 364, 385, II 140; souls in hades having divine powers, (Fate) II 119–20; souls from heaven returning, II 102 (Ellice), 84 (Paumotu); souls of infants killed returning, (Society) I 396–7; souls of *makua* class sent to *Muli-a-au* not returning, (Ongtong Java) II 113, 115; souls of *matabule*, able to intercede with gods, (Tonga) I 345; souls of slain showing wounds, (New Hebrides) II 115, (Society) I 359, 398; souls of slain, strong and vigorous, (Mangaia) II 21; souls of the slain or unburied not resting, (Samoa) I 198, 321, 322–3, cf. Society, I 359, 398; souls of suicides returning, (Marquesas) II 45, 57, 129; souls of Tangaroa's descendants returning, (Samoa) I 341; souls of unburied killing men, (Samoa) I 322; souls of unburied not able to enter other world, (Samoa) I 321; souls of unburied reaching heaven if paddled by enemy victims, (Marquesas) II 40; stones laid on grave to keep spirit down, (Niue) II 92; terms for ghosts, etc., I 207 (Marquesas), 209–10 (Paumotu), 198 (Samoa), 203 (Society), 214 (Tikopia); trafficking with the living, (Paumotu) II 85, 86, cf. Society, I 397; travellers attacked by, (Marquesas) II 45, (Society) I 359, 398; vanishing at dawn, etc., (Paumotu) II 86, (Samoa) I 340, 341, (Society) I 397, (Tonga) I 356–7; vengeful if not given food, (Tongareva) II 107; visiting islands in bird-form, (Ongtong Java) II 114, 115; wandering to avenge themselves, (Marquesas) II 45; wandering behind houses if rites not performed, (Marquesas) II 42, 56, 59, 132; wandering soul should leave earth third night after death, (Marquesas) II 43; wandering until end of funeral ceremonies, (New Hebrides, Futuna) II 116; wanderings at night, hours for, (Paumotu) II 85; wanderings of, nights after full moon favourable to, (Society) I 190, 395; worshipped, (New Hebrides, Futuna) II 116; *see also* the *Oromatua*, the *ti'i*, and the *Vehine hae*

Souls eaten: annihilated, (Mangaia) II 2, 19, 142; *areoi* soul eaten by god worshipped during life, (Society) I 370, 385, II 141; by bird (common people), (Tonga) I 345, 351, 386, II 140, 270; by bird, purified and united to deity,

(Society) I 367–8, 385, II 141, *see also* Paumotu, II 85, spirit in bird-form eating soul; by dead relations, (Society) I 372, cf. the *oromatua*, I 376, and I 364, 370, dead relation scraping or preparing soul; by fish, surviving, (Reef) II 112, 142; by god, if those of evil-doers, (Easter) II 109, 110, 142, 294; by gods in hades, (Bukabuka) II 105, 142, 294, (Fate) II 119, 142–3, (Samoa) I 339, 351, II 142, (Society) I 364, cf. I 362, II 251, 273, *see also* Paumotu, II 74, 76, 79, 142; by gods, immortal, (Society) I 370, 372, 385, II 140–1; by gods thrice, deified, (Society) I 364, 385, 394, II 140; by Miru, living again, (Mangaia) II 2, 19, 142, cf. 280; by Miru (Muru) in hades, (Aitutaki) II 33, (Mangaia) I 378, II 2, 16, 19, (Rarotonga) II 27, 30, 278, 280, cf. II 142; by Oro becoming pure spirits, (Society) I 371, 385, II 141; by Rongo ascending to heaven, (Mangaia) II 20, 141–2, 171 *n.* I, 275, 277; by Vaerua-kino, becoming lesser spirits, (Austral) II 108, 142; devouring other souls afterwards, (Society) I 372; employed to remove sickness, etc., (Society) I 367–8, 385, II 141; flesh scraped off by Oro, (Society) I 371, cf. 371–2, II 141, *see also* I 376, shell *tupere*; flesh scraped as punishment or purification, (Society) I 369, 385, II 141; oven for cooking souls in sky? (Rarotonga) II 32; person going alone to corpse devoured by spirits, (Society) I 358; as a process of purification, etc., II 140–2, 143; (Society) I 365–6, 385–6, 389, II 60–1, 79; as a punishment, (Society) I 372, 385, 387, 389, II 140; re-birth of, and ideas as to excrements, II 143–4; red feathers on corpse preventing eating of soul, (Society) I 376; soul abstaining from sexual intercourse not eaten, (Society) I 366, 387, 389, II 141; souls absorbed in body of deity, (Society) I 374, 385, II 141; souls going to sky not eaten, (Society) I 385; in Tonofiti's region? (Marquesas) II 38, 60–1, 142, 281; *see also* souls passing through *bêche de mer* into *Po*, (Society) I 376, 394

Souls, journeys of: and ancestral home in W., *see under* Ancestral home, etc.

(**Bukabuka**): gods in conflict as to fate of soul? II 105, 107; Reva's house (heaven) reached by following setting sun, II 105, 106, 294

(**Ellice**, Vaitupu): god of heaven and gods of earth disputing possession of souls? II 102, 103

(**Hervey Islands**):

(**Aitutaki**, to hell): souls diving into lake, II 33; Tangaroa catching souls in net? II 34, cf. Tautu, I 268, 270

Souls, journeys of (*cont.*)

(**Mangaia**, to heaven): date, second month of winter, I 173, II 19 *n.* 1, 19–20; souls leaping into sky from mountain, II 20, 275, 277; souls led by ghost of warrior first slain, II 20; souls passing to sky after emerging from Rongo's body, II 20, 141–2, 275, 277; starting-point in W. for final journey, II 20, cf. 275, 277

(**Mangaia**, to hell): annual, II 4, cf. Kourapapa, 7, 18; date fixed by leader, II 3–4, 18; date, second month of winter, II 7, 18–19; direct route closed by Tiki, *see* Tiki's hole; direct route through rock to fire-god's region? II 23, 193; leaping-places in W., II 10, 11–12, 13–14, 275, *see also* II 6, stone at edge of chasm; overland journey in track of sun, I 297, 307, II 4, 5, 275, 277; overland route, relations pursuing souls along, II 4, 5, 6; sea and land journeys suggesting destination in W., II 270; sea-route, souls voyaging in canoes, II 5, 6, 7, 15; sea-route, voyagers dependent on S.E. wind, II 6, 15, 18–19; souls assembling in caves in E., II 3, 4, 18; souls caught in net, II 16; souls crossing sea and sinking down with sun, I 297–8, 300, 307, II 5, 7–8, 14–15, 264, 275, 276; souls having leader, I 307, II 4–5, 6, 15, 18; souls leaping out to sea and sinking down with sun, II 7, 10, 12, 14–15; souls lodging on *bua* tree sinking down below, II 16, 275–6; souls lodging on tree-branch reserved for own tribe, II 16–18; souls submerged in lake, II 16; starting-place in W. for final journey, II 4, 5, cf. 275; Tiki leading souls across sea, II 6, 22, 171, 172, 252, 276; whirlpool route, etc., II 10–11, 12, 13, 15, 251, 275–6

(**Rarotonga**): island-routes different for different groups, II 24–5, 29; mountain path to *Avaiki* destroyed, II 23, 169, 172–3, 208–9, 253, 278; overland, leading towards W., II 24–5, 278–9; point of departure, leaping-place in W., II 25, 30, 278; souls crossing sea to *Avaiki* (heaven) in W.? II 26, 29–30, 278–9, 280; souls going to hell caught in nets, etc., II 25, 26, 27, 29–30, 32, 278, 279, 280; souls going to hell climbing trees, II 25–6, 278, 279, *see also* II 150, 169–70; trees reserved for each group, II 25–6, 30, 278

(**Manihiki**): souls of common people going to place in E., I 310, II 104, 294, 324

(**Marquesas**, to “Eden”, and to hell?): souls diving into sea, II 41, 54, 62, 63, 64, 69, 282–3; souls starting when sufficient number collected, II 41, 62; starting-point, Kiukiu, II 41, 61, 62, 71

(**Marquesas**, to *Havaiki*): gods disputing possession of souls reaching strait, II 43, 62, 63, 253; guardians of the road, II 37–8, 48; from island to island in south-easterly direction, I 309, II 36, 43, 47, 61, 69, 70–1, 282–3; Kiukiu reached by different land-routes? II 36–7, 61–2; leaping-place for all on W. coast of Hivaoa, II 36, 41, 47, 49, 61–2, 70, 71, 282–3; leaping-places other than Kiukiu sometimes mentioned, II 36, 47, 61, 62, 69, 71, 282–3; road to heaven leading down through hell, II 37–8, 47–8, 51–3, 66–7, 131, 281–2; rock at starting-point opening, etc., II 36, 37, 47, 54, 62, 63–4, 69, 283; rock, record of souls passing kept at, II 39, 64; rocks at end of road to *Lower Havaiki*, II 37–8; souls bathing etc., during land journey, II 37; *Upper Havaiki* reached in ten days, II 281; whirlpool route? II 253

(**Marquesas**, to heaven in sky): sea-route via horizon, II 41 cf. 39, 52, 63, 264, 281, *see also* canoe voyages to *Vevao* etc. *under* Canoes; souls ascending by clouds, II 41, 63, 67, 281; souls flying up to, II 38–9, 52, 62, 67, 79, 277 *n.* 1, 280–1; souls passing first to west cape of Hivaoa? II 282–3, cf. 41

(**Marquesas**, to *Tiburones*): canoe voyage towards W., II 43, 63, 70, 284

## (New Hebrides):

(**Aneiteum**, to heaven and hell): souls passing through crater in W., II 117–18, 256, 295; souls travelling westwards and plunging into sea, II 117–18, 296

(**Eromanga**): souls passing eastwards, I 311, II 123

(**Fate**, to other world): souls climbing tree and swept into sea, II 118, 123, cf. 122, 296; souls descending several stages, II 119, 120, 121–2; souls starting at sunset, II 118; souls starting from western point, II 118, 122, 296, 297

(**New Zealand**): souls travelling towards N.E., I 308

(**Ongtong Java**): souls of chiefs passing eastwards in canoes, *see under* Canoes

(**Paumotu**, to heaven?): spirit-canoe for souls of dead, *see under* Canoes

(**Paumotu**, to hell): gods disputing possession of souls? II 62 *n.* 1, 81, 84; souls eating poisoned fruit hurled into pond, II 81, 84; souls slipping into muddy abyss, II 74, 289; souls wandering to hell shown way to heaven at price of gift, II 80

(**Rotuma**, to heaven): certain souls starting from N.E. islet, II 93, 94; souls diving into sea from western point, II 93, 94, 291

## INDEX

387

Souls, journeys of (*cont.*)

(**Samoa**, to heaven): different groups having different routes to *Fafa* openings, I 323–4, 338; down pit and via underground stream, I 332–4, II 268; final plunge, from western end of Savai'i, I 335, cf. 146; from island to island westwards, I 323–4, 326, 329, 335, II 267, 268; leaping-stones, I 323, 327; souls diving down and going under sea, I 326, 329, 332–4, II 268; voyage in spirit-ship, I 333, II 268

(**Samoa**, to hell): direct route closed by Ti'iti'i? I 325–6, 329, II 23, 156, 187–8, cf. Opolu closing entrance to centre of earth, II 186, *see also* II 184, 187, 205, Ti'iti'i entering under-world through rock; journey beyond the *Fafa* unknown, I 349, II 269; land journey to *Fafa* same as for souls going to heaven, II 268, cf. I 332; souls sinking down with sun at the *Fafa*? I 328, cf. 113; whirlpool route from Manu'a? I 324, 329, II 249

(**Society**, to *Po*, hell): direct route from Mehani in Ra'iatea? I 381–3, cf. II 273; route leading from Ra'iatea to Tupai, I 380 cf. 361, 381–2, II 273, 274; route by mountain lake, I 363 cf. 362, 371, 380, 381, 383, II 272–3; route through cavern or crater, I 362–3, 374 cf. 375, 380–1, 383, II 250–1, 272–3, *see also* rock entrance to fire-region, II 192; route through ground and across or under sea? I 377 cf. 378, 380, 383, II 273, 274; souls climbing cliff above sea, I 362, 380, II 273; souls wandering about Tupai, I 398–9; *Tutahoroa* the road to, I 363

(**Society**, to *Rohutu-noamoa*): from island to island in north-westerly direction, I 361, 379, 382, II 273; routes to hell and, the same for first stages, I 361, 379, 380, 382, II 273; souls ascending from Mehani Mt.? I 379–80, 382–3, cf. II 272; souls bound for, not going to Tupai, I 361, 380; souls plucking flowers of death, I 361, 384, II 81, 125; spirits escorting souls, I 361, 380; starting-point in W., (Tahiti) I 361, 379; stones of life and death, *see under* Stones

(**Tonga**, to *Bulotu*, heaven): canoe voyage, I 344, II 270; cave entrance to *Bulotu*? II 188; starting-point in W., I 343, II 269, 271

(**Tonga**, to hell?): path to *Lolo-fonua*, I 353, II 190 cf. 205

Sound, evolution of, *see* Light, sound, stability, etc.

Sourangpol (Rotuma), I 95

Southern Cross, I 136 (Fotuna), 130 (Samoa), 121, 126 (Society)

Southern Fish, (Fotuna) I 135

Spica, a pillar of the sky, (Society) I 121, 125

Stars: I 119–37; 136 (Bukabuka), 135–6 (Fotuna), 132–3 (Hervey), 136 (Manihiki), 134 (Marquesas), 137 (New Hebrides), 135 (Niue), 135 (Paumotu), 136 (Rakahanga), 128–32 (Samoa), 120–7 (Society), 136 (Tokelau), 132 (Tonga), 136 (Tongareva); birth of, I 72 (Easter), 52 (Samoa), 61, 62, 64, 109, 115, 121–2 (Society); chiefs or priests knowing, I 140 (Rotuma), 139 (Samoa), 126, 137, 138 (Society), 140 (Tokelau); common people only knowing Pleiades, (Society) I 126, 138; created by god, (Society) I 122; created by Kane, Ku and Lono, (Hawai'i) I 23; created by Mekemeke, (Easter) I 72–3; created by Tangaroa, (Society) I 60; and feasts, (Society) I 123, 124; fish associated with, *see under* Fish; fixed to sky, (Paumotu) I 135; as girls or women, (Marquesas) I 208, II 65; Hina securing immortality for, (Society) I 65, II 149; holding sky in place, (Society) I 91, 121; human origin of certain stars, I 133 (Hervey), 128–9, 130, 131 (Samoa), 125 (Society); knowledge of, almost lost, (Samoa) I 130, cf. Niue, I 135; months named after, etc., *see under* Months; and the pillars of the sky, (Society) I 91, 121, 125; planets known, I 128 (Samoa), 138 (Society); planets not distinguished from, (Society) I 119, 122, 123; as royal personages, (Society) I 124; Ru entangled among, (Mangaia) I 43; souls of dead associated with, (Marquesas) I 134, 207–8, 208–9, II 65–6, (Ongtong Java) I 311, II 112–13, (Society) I 127, (Tokelau) I 117, 213, II 100, 292, (Tongareva) I 136, II 107, 108; souls of living existing in, (Marquesas) I 207–8, 208–9, 212; S.E. gales due to, (Paumotu) I 135; star Rehoua marking new year, (Society) I 172; “the stinking-hitter” foretelling cyclone, (Samoa) I 130; stoning sun to cause rain, (New Hebrides) I 118; stuck in sky by god, (Society) I 122; as time-pieces, I 128, 139 (Samoa), 191 (Society); used as bait by Vatea, (Mangaia) I 132–3; *see also* Evening Star, Morning Star and individual names

Stars, Shooting-stars: children of Ruatupua, (Society) I 120; evil genii, (Society) I 127; excrements of god, (Marquesas) I 117, cf. 134; names for, I 132 (Samoa), 127 (Society); omens of birth, (Society) I 127; omens of death, (Marquesas) I 207–8, 209, II 65, cf. Society, I 127; returning to sky and



Stars, Shooting-stars (*cont.*)

animating new body, (Marquesas) I 207–8, 209, II 65; uncovering to, (Society) I 127

Steering by stars, I 140 (Ellice), 139–40 (Hervey), 134, 140 (Marquesas), 137, 140 (New Hebrides), 140 (Paumotu), 140 (Rotuma), 128, 139 (Samoa), 137–8, cf. 120 and 142 (Society), 140 (Tokelau)

Stones, etc.: begotten by Atea, (Marquesas) I 68, II 242; chip broken off, to enable spirits to go in and out, (Aneiteum) II 117; giving birth to island, (Tikopia) I 18, 39; god in, guarding spirit-land, (Futuna) II 115–16; gods represented by, I 18 (Bukabuka), 17 (Samoa); of Haamonga trilith, brought from *Bulotu*, (Tonga) II 163; having souls, (Society) I 206; lava bearing child, etc., (Rotuma) I 18, 79; lava regarded as transformed doves, (Samoa) I 8; leaping-stones, *see under* Souls, journeys of; of life and death, etc., touched by souls of dead, (Society) I 361, 363, 368, 369, 373, 379, 384, 385, 387, II 125; male and female ancestor stones worshipped, (Tikopia) I 18; man deriving from rocks, stones, etc., *see under* Origin of Man; in *marae*, called Romatane, (Society) I 376; men turning into, (Rotuma) I 70, 95; observation of sun by stakes or, (Paumotu) I 177; offerings made to, for fine weather, (Samoa) I 16–17; pumice stone, the bones of Ru, (Mangaia) I 43; red stone invoked etc., in cases of illness, (Ellice) I 223; rock bringing forth world, etc., *see under* Origin of world; rock marrying hills? (Samoa) I 17, 79; rock representing wind god, (Society) I 142; rocks, as combatants in cosmic myths, (Samoa) I 4, 5, 6, II 158; rocks, origin of, (Easter) I 72, (Samoa) I 4, 49, II 157, 158, 159, (Society) I 62; rocks, *see also* Papa *under* Earth; sacred stone for controlling winds, (New Hebrides) I 153; Salevao god of rocks, (Samoa) I 5, cf. 6; stone called after dead man, (Samoa) I 128; stone giving birth to ancestors of gods, (Tonga) I 9–10, cf. 79; Tangaroa giving life to stone and marrying it, (Samoa) I 7; thrown down etc. by Tangaroa, forming land, (Samoa) I 48, 49, cf. Tonga, I 56–7; turned into chiefs, (Rotuma) I 71

Stream sacred to priests and kings, (Mangaia) II 4

Suicides: enjoying delights of paradise, etc., (Easter) II 109, 110, 130, 294, cf. Marquesas, II 43, 57, 110, 129; souls of, returning to persecute person hated, (Marquesas) II 45, 57, 129; Tafa'i's

father committing suicide, (Paumotu) II 79; would-be suicides desecrating graves of dead, (Paumotu) II 85

Sun: aiding warrior by blinding enemy, (Rarotonga) I 111–12; Alo'alo the son of, (Samoa) I 109; an animated being, (Tahiti) I 98, 114; ascending sky by means of tree, (Samoa) I 94, 101–2; Atea representing, (Marquesas) I 20–2, cf. Mangaia, I 115; born of earth, (Paumotu) I 15; born of night and day, (Samoa) I 52; born of rocks, (Samoa) I 4; born of Roua and earth, (Society) I 64, cf. Rua-tupua, 120–1; child of Tane and Tangaroa, (Tahiti) I 63; created by Atea? (Paumotu) I 151, II 242; created by Kane, Ku and Lono, (Hawai'i) I 23; created by Maui, (Manihiki) I 118, II 180, (Society) I 110, 114 n. 5, II 214; created by Mekemeke, (Easter) I 72–3; descent into *Avaiki* etc., holes at horizon, (Mangaia) I 115–16, II 15, 22, 23, cf. Society, I 142, sun ascending and descending through caves; devouring men, (Samoa) I 98, 101, 106; flat disc moving round earth, (Samoa) I 113; hair of noosed sun-god on fish-hook, (Marquesas) II 176, cf. I 112; having power over life and death, (Aneiteum) I 104, 118, cf. Mangaia, II 6, soul going to *Avaiki* begging sun for new life, *and* Samoa, II 148, Sina's soul and life restored by sun; immortal, (New Hebrides) I 118; Inhungaraing, god of, (Aneiteum) II 181; and journeys of souls of dead, *see under* Bukabuka, Mangaia (hell), Fate, *and* Samoa (hell) *under* Souls, journeys of; made after moon, (Ellice) I 117, (Manihiki) I 118, II 180; and moon, I 96–118; and moon, eyes of Laukiti, (Ellice) I 117; and moon the eyes of Vatea, (Mangaia) I 12, 13, 30, 115; and moon once living on earth in E. (Aneiteum) I 104; and moon, parents of Sina, (Aneiteum) I 104, 109; and moon, in the second heaven, (Niue) I 104; and moon, the shades of Tangaroa, (Samoa) I 52; moon as wife or daughter of, I 108–9; native names for, I 96; navigating by, in daytime, (Society) I 137; night due to demon's swallowing, (Society) I 114; observation of, by means of stones, etc., (Paumotu) I 177; Oeroa Tabooa the sun in man's shape, (Society) I 63; passing through sea and rising on other side of sky, I 113 (Samoa), 114 (Society); produced by the heavens, (Society) I 62; providing rain, (New Hebrides) I 118; Ra associated with, I 96; (Mangaia) I 99, 115, II 22, 192, 202; Roua identified with, I 99; regulating movements of, in order to lengthen nights,



## INDEX

389

Sun (*cont.*)

(New Hebrides) I 112–13; regulation of movements of, by Maui, etc., (Ellice) I 112, (Hervey) I 111–12, 116, (Marquesas) I 112, (Paumotu) I 112, (Samoa) I 110, (Society) I 110–11, II 165, cf. Samoa, I 98, 'Ui persuading sun to go more slowly; return of Mahoui or, celebrated at spring feast, (Marquesas) I 175, II 173–4, cf. 164 and *n.* 2; setting in sea, causing hissing sound, (Society) I 114, cf. Samoa, I 113; setting, sickness or death the penalty for regarding, (New Hebrides) I 118, cf. Samoa, I 113, 328; solar and lunar years, and intercalation, (Society) I 167–8, 169; solar year, (Society) I 170; solstices noted, (Mangaia) II 3, 18, (Society) I 171–2; soul going to, if fire lit on grave, (Fate) I 118, II 121 cf. 122, 297; souls of dead feasting with Maui in, (Society) I 114 cf. *n.* 5, 367, 383–4, 389, II 164, 251; the stars the children of moon and, (Society) I 109, 115, 121–2, *see also* Marquesas, I 117, 134, shooting stars; a substance like fire, (Tahiti) I 98, 114; sunshine sent by spirit in morning star, (Ongtong Java) I 153; Tangaroa as, (Samoa) I 98, 101, 106; Tangaroa detaining, (Mangaia) II 5; Tangaroa the grandfather of, (Samoa) I 101; Tangaroa living in, (Society) I 59, 98, 114, cf. *n.* 5; Tangaroa ordaining course of, (Manu'a) I 52, 88

Supu, god, (Fate) II 121

Swing, Tamakaia fishing up land from, (New Hebrides) I 40

Taboo days: after a death, I 273–4 (Marquesas), 257–65 (Society); in connection with birth, (Society) I 258, 261, 262, 264–5; in connection with first catch, (Society) I 258, 261–2, 264; in connection with *palolo*-fishing, (Fiji) I 164, cf. Samoa, I 163–4; removal of restrictions, (Society) I 258

Taboo marks, coconut leaves as, (Rotuma) I 70

Taema and Tilafainga, nieces of Si'uleo, (Samoa) I 334, cf. II 213

Ta'e-o-Tangaroa (Samoa), I 98

Tafa'i: marrying Sina, (Samoa) I 100–1; seeking father in spirit-world, (Paumotu) I 105, II 79–80, (Society) I 375, 381, 383, *see also* Niue tale, II 88, 91

Tafatokei, god of under-world, (Fate) II 118

Tafiki, god, (Tikopia) I 39

Tahiti: created and peopled by Tangaroa, (Manu'a) I 52–3; fished up by Maui,

(Paumotu) I 36, (Society) I 34–5; fished up by Maui and Ru, (Paumotu) I 36; fished up by Tangaroa, (Society) I 35; fished up by Tino-ta'ata, (Society) I 35; islands fragments of earth-mass and peopled by Tahitians, I 64; man etc., derived from Tane and Tangaroa, I 63, cf. 64; migrants going to Mangaia from, *see* Tane or Tahitian group *below*; migrants going to the Marquesas from, I 309; migrants going to Rarotonga from, I 304–5; migration to New Zealand starting from, I 308; name *Hawaiki* applied to, (Paumotu) I 36, 293, 305; natives' knowledge of other islands, I 91, II 307–8, 310; origin of things ascribed to Tangaroa, I 59, 61–2, 63–4; originally a shark fished up by Maui, (Society) I 35

Tahorotakarari, saviour god, (Paumotu) II 82, 83, 84

Taihe (Society): dying at bottom of cavern of *Po*, I 362, 380, 383, II 273, 274; possibly *Ti'i*, I 383, II 251, 273

Taioa and Taipii groups, having own skies, (Nukuhiva) I 92

Takua, mother of saviour god, (Paumotu) II 82, 84

Talanga, Taranga, *see under* Maui-atalanga

Tama (Paumotu): healing those falling from trees, etc., II 73; to be identified with Tahorotakarari? II 84; leading souls to both the heavens, II 73, 75, cf. 78; saviour god, II 81, 83, 84, 107

Tamaei (Tamaye) associated with origin of Bukabuka, I 18

Tamahani, *see* Mehani Mt.

Tamakaia (New Hebrides): the first man, I 40, II 256; and Maui-tikitiki, creator-gods, II 181, cf. I 73; and Maui-tikitiki, fishing up land, I 40, II 182–3, 222, 256

Tama-pouli-alamafao, (Tonga) I 55

Tamatea, days named after, I 191 (Hervey), 189–90 (Society)

Tamaui and Takatu, trying to poison soul, (Paumotu) II 81

Tane (Kane): associated with light, I 23, 75, II 257, 339; an earlier god than Tangaroa, I 302; a later god than Maui, I 302, II 257, 339; name meaning "male person," I 47; a sky-god, I 23, II 257, 339; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 230; not worshipped in Samoa, II 231; not worshipped by upper classes only, II 332

—, Kane (**Hawai'i**): a creator-god, I 23; existing from beginning, I 23, 74; man created in image of, I 23; a sky-god associated with light, I 23

- Tane (Hervey):** breaking large star into Pleiades, I 133; forming Mitiaro, I 67
- (Aitutaki)** Tane-roa, god of spirit-world, I 268, 270
- (Mangaia):** association with Venus, I 132; branch on *bua* tree for worshippers of, II 16, 17, 18; day of, favourable for getting fish and victims, I 192; day of month sacred to, I 191; red pigeon of, II 193; Rongo and, patrons of dances, I 191; son of Vatea, I 14, 80, *see also* Tane-papa-kai, I 14; storm wave called Tane-ere-tui, I 147
- (Rarotonga):** Maui-tikitiki taking fish to sky to, II 169, *cf.* I 147–8; at the naming of Maui-tikitiki, II 168; and other gods, challenging Maui, II 170; pursued into sky by Iro, II 196; and Rongo, creator-gods? I 67; son of Papa and Te Tumu, I 14
- Tane (Marquesas):** and Atea, separating earth and sky, I 25–6, *cf.* 80, II 229; and Atea, as substitutes for Maui-gods, II 230, 236, 241–2, 243
- Tane-mahuta (New Zealand):** the father of forests, I 24; separating sky from earth, I 24–5; son of earth and sky, I 24, 80
- Tane (Paumotu):** and Atea, separating sky from earth? I 15, 27–28; causing vegetation to grow, I 28, II 229; day of month named after, I 193, II 242; disclosing sources of history, I 28, II 229; fighting Atea, I 15, 27, II 229; high-priest praying to, II 241; *marae* named after, II 242; one of the leading gods, I 68, II 236, 241–2; raising sky, *etc.*, I 15, 27, 28, 44, II 229; reigning in the heavens, I 27; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 230, 236–7, 241–2, 243
- Tane (Society):** aiding Tangaroa to create world, I 63–4, II 233; born of night, I 74, 290–1; cult of, superseded by Tangaroa-cult, I 64, II 232–3, 243–4; day of month named after, I 188; devouring men, I 374; dwelling in heaven, I 376; father or god of wind, (Tahiti) I 63, 141, 142; feast of renewal of “shell” of? II 164 *and n.* 2; the Milky Way and sharks connected with, I 126–7; the months *etc.*, descended from, (Tahiti) I 63, 170; Oeroa Tabooa the son of, I 63; prayers generally addressed to, (Tahiti) I 61, *cf.* 142; resembling Mars and Pluto, I 374, *cf.* 394; sky, sea, *etc.*, descended from, I 63; Tangaroa as father of, I 61, 64, 170, II 233; Tangaroa as wife of, (Tahiti) I 63, 64, 170, II 166, 233; Tī'i descended from Tangaroa and, I 63, II 166; worshipped in Huahine, I 379, II 164 *n.* 2
- Tane or Tahitian group (Mangaia):** deriving from Tahiti, II 7, 9; girl of, and Kauava cave, II 7, 17 *n.* 1; having own branch of *bua* tree, II 16, 17, 18; having own starting-places to *Avaiiki*? II 12–13, 14; nearly exterminated, II 9, 12, 13; possibly merged with Ngariki group, II 14; settling in N.E., II 9, 12, 13, 14; worshipping Tane, II 9, 17, 18
- Tangaroa (Ta'aroa, Tanaoa, Tangaloa):** associated with the sun, I 98–9; cult of, more recent than that of Maui, II 257, 339; god of light, II 257; Hina and, I 97–104; a later god than Tane, I 302; a sky-god, II 257, 339; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 208, 230; not worshipped by upper classes only, II 332
- Tangaroa (Easter):** month associated with? I 180, 181
- Tangaroa (Hawai'i):** laying the egg of the world, I 19
- Tangaroa (Hervey Islands):** pigeon of, connected with Atiu, I 66–7
- (Aitutaki):** killing souls of men, II 34
- (Mangaia):** day of, a day for catching fish and victims, I 192; days of month named after, I 191; detaining sun for Veetini, II 5; human in shape, I 14; leaving Mangaia for Rarotonga, *etc.*, II 234–5; son of Vatea and brother of Rongo, I 14, 80, II 234
- (Rarotonga):** creator-god, I 66, II 235; creeping vine, and names of daughters of, I 66; devouring sun and moon, I 116; fire-god living below, II 195, 202, 228; heads of slain offered to, II 240; Ina the daughter of, I 102, 109; Ina the wife of, I 66, 97, 109; killed and resuscitated by Maui-the-third, II 151, 195; living in *Avaiiki*, I 66; Maui-the-third the grandson of, II 194, 195, 202; Maui-tikitiki son of, by Ataranga's wife, I 43, II 168, 195–6, 202, 222 *n.* 2, 228–9; and the naming of Maui-tikitiki, II 168; and other gods, challenging Maui, II 170; principal god, I 116; Ru descended from, II 168; son of Papa and Te Tumu, I 14; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 228–9, 230, 234–5, 240; having tattooed face? II 195; tutelary god of Rarotonga, II 235, 240; wandering in heavens, I 66
- , Tanaoa (**Marquesas**): cult of, unimportant and recent? II 235–6; day of month named after, I 192; lord of darkness, defeated by Atea, I 20–2, II 75, 235; son of, causing partial destruction of island, II 235
- Tangaroa (New Zealand):** driven into sea, I 24; father of fish and reptiles, I 24; son of sky and earth, I 24, 80

## INDEX

391

- Tangaroa (Niue):** one of the principal gods, II 178
- Tangaroa (Paumotu):** cult of, superseding cult of Atea, I 305, II 236, 242–3, 244; deriving from earth? I 16; helping Tane to defeat Atea, I 15, 27, II 229; one of the leading gods, I 68 cf. 69, II 236, 241–2; sky propped up by, I 44, II 229; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 230, 236–7, 240
- Tangaroatui-mata (Rakahanga):** keeper of fire in *Hawaiki* below? II 200, 203
- Tangaroa (Rotuma):** child of sky and earth, I 44; principal god, prayed to for rain, etc., II 237; pushing up sky, I 44, II 229; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 230, 237, 240
- Tangaroa (Samoa):** creating heavens and earth, I 49, cf. 50–4, 86–8; and the creation of man from maggots, etc., I 7, 8, 48–9, 53–5; descended from rocks, earth, and skies, I 3; existing in space, I 49, 50, 73–4; Fe'e created by, etc., I 49, II 157; Fe'e an earlier god than, I 325; god of heaven, I 48; holding council-meeting in ninth heaven, I 52, 88; islands fished up by, I 33, II 227; islands fished up by messengers of, I 33, II 227; islands fished up by son of, I 6, 33, II 227; islands produced through stones by, I 48, 49, *see also* I 50–1, 86; Malietoa chiefs descended from, I 3–4; man descended from, I 3–4, 8, cf. 6, 9, first man marrying Tangaroa's daughter; Manu'a the earthly home of, (Manu'a) I 54; and Manu'an entrance to other world, I 324, 325–6, 329; Manu'an legends glorifying, I 86; months associated with worship of, I 154, 155, 156; ordaining courses of sun and moon, etc., I 52, 88; Pili descended from, I 4; and the propping-up of the sky, I 41, 50, 51, cf. 52, 86–7, II 227; Sina the daughter of, I 49, 97, 101, 109; Sina the wife of, I 109; Sina the wife of son of, I 98, 109; soul given to man by, I 49, cf. 51, 87, 99; souls of descendants of, returning to earth, I 341; stone given soul and married by, I 7; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 230–1, 240, 243; sun-god devouring men, etc., I 98, 101, 106; the sun the grandson of, I 101; sun and moon the shades of, I 52; as the sun, and Sina as the moon, I 109; Ti'iti'i defeating, and stealing taro from, II 156–7, 185; Ti'iti'i the son of, I 41, II 156, 227; the *tuiatua* descended from, I 6; the *tuimanu'a* descended from, I 98; *tuli* aiding, in the evolution of world, etc., I 48–9; *tuli* (snipe) the child of, I 7, 48
- the Tangaroa family (**Samoa**): acting as intermediaries for Tangaroa, I 49, cf. 32 *n.* 1, 52; at earthly wedding of Tafa'i and Sina, I 101; and the first *tuimanu'a*, I 98, II 231; living in the heavens, I 52, 98; Manu'a the earthly home of, I 33; names of members of, I 4, 49, 52; party attacking, containing pre-Tangaroan gods, II 157
- Tangaroa-the-messenger (Samoa):** ambassador of the heavens, I 52; associated with the *tuli* bird, I 54; created by Tangaroa, I 52; Manu'a the earthly home of, I 53, 54; and the origin of the world, I 52–3, 54, cf. 32 *n.* 2; Upolu and Tutuila resting-places for, I 53, 54
- Tangaroa (Society):** associated with light, etc., I 19, 30–2, 76; as a bird or spirit, I 63, II 166; body invisible, I 59; born of night, I 63, 74, 290–1; as a canoe, I 99; casting “shell” and renewing body, I 59, II 146; creating gods, I 59, 65, cf. I 61, the *atua* the children of Tangaroa; creating universe, aided by Hina, I 59–61, 97, 108; creating universe, and Ti'i creating first woman, I 60, II 166; creating world, I 30–2, 63–4, 65; days named after, I 188; and earth or rock (Papa), parents of gods, nature, etc., I 59, 61–2, 63; earthquake god, II 214, 228, 233; emerging from egg, enlarging earth with shell, I 19 cf. 30, 31, 65; existing from eternity, I 59, 74, II 146; fire-god below, II 191–2, 202, 228; fishing-up islands, I 35, II 228; gods begotten by means of glance of, I 62–3; gods the children of, creating parts of world, I 59, 62; heaven and hell created by, I 60; Hina created by, I 59; Hina as daughter of, I 59, 97, 99, 108; Hina as wife of, I 60, 97, 99, 108–9, II 166; “killed” and “resuscitated” by Maui [-ti'iti'i?], II 192; king of *Po*, I 363, 374–5, cf. 394; living in highest heavens, I 59; living in *Po*, I 290; Maui as another name for, II 214, 221; Maui fishing up the world created by, I 35; months, year, etc., the children of, I 61, 170; Oeroa Tabooa the son of, I 63; and Oro, gods of highest rank, I 63; Oro the son of, I 60, 63, 108–9, II 232, *see also* Orre-orre, I 59, 141–2; the propagator of all things, I 31; producing man, I 19; Ra'iatea the centre of cult of Oro and, I 379; river of, in *Po*, I 362–3, 374, 380–1, cf. 383; Roua confused with, as creator, I 64, 99; Rouanoua the son of, I 141; soul given to universe by, I 62; and the stars, I 60, 61; as substitute for the Maui-gods, II 230, 232–3, 240; sun and moon etc. created by, I 60, cf. 63; as the sun, sea and sky red with his blood, I 99, *see also* I 59, 98, 114 and *n.* 5, Tangaroa as male living in sun; supporting

- Tangaroa (Society)** (*cont.*)  
 the rock-foundation of world, I 59;  
 Tane the husband of, (Tahiti) I 63, 64,  
 170, II 166, 233; Tane the son of, I 61,  
 64, 170, II 233; Tane superseded by,  
 I 64, 232–3, 243–4; having a tattooed  
 face, II 191, cf. Rarotonga, II 195;  
 Ti'i (the first man) created by, I 65,  
 II 149, 167; Ti'i (the first man) de-  
 scended from, I 60, 62, 63 cf. 61,  
 II 166; and Tu, cursing mankind,  
 I 65–6, II 149, 167; the two ancestor *ti'i*  
 said to be names for, I 64, cf. II 221;  
 wind the child of, I 63, 141, cf. 59
- Tangaroa (Tonga)**: black and white sons  
 of, the ancestors of men, I 57–8; as  
 brother of Maui and Hikuleo, I 349,  
 353, II 161, 231, and see Table, I 10;  
 creating men and taking them to  
*Bulotu*, I 58, 349; descended from  
 slime, stone, etc., I 9–10; and the  
 evolution of men from maggots, etc.,  
 I 55–7, cf. 58; going to rule in sky, I 10,  
 353, 354, 355, II 161, 250; islands  
 emerging through influence of? I 55;  
 islands fished up by, I 33, 57, 132,  
 II 227; Kijikiji aiding, I 56, II 162;  
 and Maui, restraining Hikuleo, I 348,  
 II 161, 212, 227–8; the second god,  
 nearly as old as Maui, II 231; as sub-  
 stitute for the Maui-gods, II 230, 231–2,  
 240
- Tangaroa-the-artisan (Tonga)**: origin of  
 Eua and Ata due to, I 55, 56–7
- Tangaroa-the-messenger (Tonga)**: as-  
 suming form of bird, I 56, cf. 55, 57, 97;  
 connected with evolution of world and  
 man, I 55–6, 56–7, II 162; living in sky,  
 I 55
- the Tangaroa family in sky (**Tonga**):  
 names of members of, I 55
- Tangaroa (Uvea)**: drawing up island in  
 fishing-net, I 38, II 229; as substitute  
 for the Maui-gods, II 230, 237, 240
- the “Tangaroans,” I 32, 58, 302–6, 324–5,  
 II 230–1, cf. 232–3 and 236, 243–4, 270
- Tangiia (Hervey)**: god of one wind,  
 (Rarotonga) I 150; son of Vatea, (Man-  
 gaia) I 14, 80, see also Tangiia-about-to-  
 fly, I 116
- Tangiia or Pa group (Rarotonga)**: district,  
 II 24; genealogy of founder of, I 15;  
 and Society Island element in Raro-  
 tonga, I 304–5; souls having own island  
 route, II 25, 29; tree for souls of, II 25–6,  
 30
- Tango, god, (Mangaia)** I 13, 30
- Tapufatu, god, (Ellice)** II 102
- Tapuitema, evening star, a cannibal,**  
 (Samoa) I 128–9
- Taro**: month named in connection with,  
 (Samoa) I 155; stolen from *Pulotu* by  
 Ti'iti'i, (Samoa) II 156–7, 185; sup-  
 porting sky? (Rarotonga) I 43
- Tasi, (Samoa)** I 128–9
- Tati, fire and earthquake god, supporting**  
 Samoa, II 185–6, 209–10, 237–8
- Tattooing**: Aldebaran the pillar to tattoo  
 by, (Society) I 121; of *areoi*, when  
 transferred to higher grade, (Society)  
 I 390–1; introduced by Tiki, II 174, 175  
 (Marquesas), 169 (Rarotonga); skin  
 removed from corpse to efface, (Mar-  
 quesas) II 42, 64, 123 n. 1; souls strip-  
 ping off, to gain admittance to *Abokas*,  
 (Fate) II 119, 122–3; Tangaroa having  
 face tattooed, II 191 (Society), 195?  
 (Rarotonga)
- Tautu, (Aitutaki)** I 267–8
- Tavi-oa, god of souls in mire, (Mar-**  
 quesas) II 48
- Taviroua-l'orai*, see under Assembly house  
 of gods and dead
- Ta-whiri-ma-tea, (New Zealand)** I 24–5
- Tayahoboo, Tiahoboo, (Society)** I 366–7,  
 378, 381, 383, 386, 393, II 273
- Teailoilo, doorkeeper of Maui-alonga,**  
 (Fotuna) I 37, II 97, 100, 255
- Teatamaofa, ruler of heaven, (Ellice)** II 102
- Tee, see Ti'i under Maui-tikitiki, and see**  
*also the ti'i, etc., below*
- the *Teeferei*, (Society) I 17
- Te-erui (Aitutaki)**: creator-god, I 29, 67;  
 discovering the land of light, I 28–9,  
 cf. 47; the first man, I 29
- Tefaafanau, fishing up world, (Paumotu)**  
 I 36
- Teii group, having own sky, (Marquesas)**  
 I 92
- Teikamoei, (Marquesas)** II 174
- Teikiha'aotepo, (Marquesas)** II 48, 68–9
- Teipe, god of Tongans, (Mangaia)** II 9, 12
- Tekauae, outwitting Miru, (Aitutaki)**  
 II 33–4
- Te-manava-roa, (Mangaia)** I 12
- Temeane, see Mehani Mt.**
- Te-Moana, chief, (Marquesas)** II 43, 44
- Te-orraha, creator of land, etc., (Tahiti)**  
 I 17

## INDEX

393

- Tepnamea, god of hades, (Paumotu) II 81, 107
- Terameamus, (New Hebrides) II 183
- Terupe, god, (Ellice) II 102
- Tetoo, *see under* Marquesas *under* Tu
- Teva group, (Tahiti) II 232
- Thieving: from another tribe, a virtue, (Niue) II 87, 138, 139; certain nights favourable for, I 191 (Hervey), 191 *n.* 4, 190, 395 (Society); Iro the patron of thieves, (Mangaia) I 191; period before dawn connected with, (Tonga) I 187; priest discovering thief, (Society) I 205
- Thunder: the anger of Fakafotu, (Tokelau) I 151–2; origin of, (Society) I 62; sent by souls of chiefs, (Manihiki) II 104
- Ti, god in other world, (Aitutaki) I 268, 270
- Tia, hades, (Ellice) II 102, 293–4
- Tiari, paradise in sky, (Mangaia) II 20, 21
- Tiburones, a paradise in west, (Marquesas) II 43, 51, 54, 63, 70
- the *Ti'i* (Society): children of *Ti'i*, departmental gods, I 60–1, cf. 64–5, II 166; deriving from Opoa, I 64, 65, II 166; *Ti'i* Maaraauta and *Ti'i* Maaraatai parents of men, I 64–5, II 166
- the *t'i'i*, [*tee*, *tiki*, *tigi*] (Society): departed spirits, images, etc., I 203, 204, 376; feared, I 372–3, 396; induced to enter images by sorcerers, I 372; living in *Po* or night, I 373; lodging in images at burial-places, I 204, 366, 367, 395–6; and *oromatua*, deified souls of dead, I 394; sorcerers killing people by aid of, I 372; souls of children of sorcerers becoming, I 373; souls of the dead, killing the living, I 395–6; spirits but not same as gods, I 372, cf. 203, 376; worshipped, addressed by hissing, I 395–6
- Ti'i*, *Ti'iti'i*, *Tiki*, *Tikitiki*, *see under* Maui-tikitiki
- Tiipa, god of Pomare family, I 142
- Tiki's hole, (Mangaia) II 22–3, 171–3, 209, 251–2, 276
- Tikopia, origin of, I 39
- Tilafainga and Taema, nieces of Si'uileo, (Samoa) I 334, cf. II 213
- Tingilau (Samoa): inducing sun to restore Sina's soul, II 148; seeking Sina in spirit-world, I 331–2; Sina climbing tree to escape, I 94, 101; sleeping at *malae* and conferring with gods, I 216
- Tinirau (Mangaia): connection with fish, I 13; son of the great mother, I 13
- Tinomana group, (Rarotonga) II 24, 25
- Tino-o-matua-uru*, (Paumotu) II 79, 80
- Tino Taata, fishing up land, (Society) I 35, cf. II 11, II 237, 238
- Toahitu, god, (Society) I 59
- Toa-Miru, goddess, (Paumotu) II 80
- Tohe Tika, thunder-god, (Marquesas) II 174
- Toiva, (Samoa) I 128–9, 145
- Tokaniaua, (Rotuma) I 70
- Tokelau Islands: ancestors of natives re-born as *papalangi*, I 301; fished up by Maui-kisikisi, (Tonga) I 34; fished up by Tikitiki and Taranga, (Tokelau) I 37
- Tokilagafanua, (Tonga) II 213
- Tonga-iti (Mangaia): god of Tongan group, II 9; incarnate in lizards, I 14; son of Vatea and Papa, I 14
- Tonga-iti (Rarotonga): counselling worshipper, I 111; god of one wind, I 150; and other gods, challenging Maui, II 170
- Tongan, Fijian, and Samoan groups, called *Avaiiki-raro*, (Rarotonga) I 293, 304
- Tongan group (Mangaia): burial-cave, II 9, 11, 13; district in S. or S.E.? II 9, 12, 13; gods of, II 9; having own starting-places etc. for *Avaiiki*, II 12–14; Teaaki and Teipe sections of, II 9
- Tongan Islands: created by Tangaroa, (Manu'a) I 52, 54; families in, derived from Fijian woman and Maui-kisikisi, II 163; fished up by Maui, (Tonga) I 33, 34, II 227, 232; fished up by Maui-alonga, (Fotuna) I 37; fished up by Maui-kisikisi with Manu'an hook, (Tonga) I 33–4, II 227, 232; fished up by Tangaroa, (Tonga) I 33, 57, II 227, 232; Haamonga trilith in, the "burden of Maui," II 163; islands supported by Maui? I 33, II 227; low islands due to Maui and high ones to Hikuleo, I 34, II 227, 232; natives not having official log-books, I 313–14; peopled by gods from *Bulotu*, I 58; peopled by Tangaroa's "black" son, I 57–8; peopling of, (Samoa) I 53, 54; "Tangaroans" going from Fiji to, I 303, 304; Tongan migrants in Marquesas, I 309; Tongans the ancestors of Niue people, I 69; Tongans drifting to Futuna, II 181



- Tongareva:** fished up by Maui, (Marquesas) II 176, (Rarotonga) I 38–9; fished up by Vatea, (Hervey) I 38, 132–3; hook used to fish up, now tail of Scorpio, (Hervey) I 132–3
- Tongo-i-fare,** II 199 (Rakahanga), 194, 202 (Rarotonga)
- To Noava,** (Rotuma) II 93–4
- Tonofiti, Tokohiti** (Marquesas), chief of all *Hava'i*, II 48; god or ruler of underground paradise, II 38, 51–2, 53, 55, 66, 131, 282; roasted souls sent to kitchen of, II 38, 60, 281; souls without presents not admitted to presence of, II 37–8, 47–8, 59, 60, 67, 131–2; wife of, II 48
- Tonumaip'e'a family,** (Samoa) I 128, 129–30
- To'ovalu,** pilot of spirit-ship, (Samoa) I 333 *and n.* 4
- Toposiesi,** (Futuna) II 183
- Totorro,** (Tahiti) I 17
- Tourooa-t'era'i,** *see under* Assembly house of gods and dead
- Tower of Babel** myths, buildings erected to reach sky, I 95 (Fiji), 94–5 (Paumotu), 95 (Rotuma)
- Trees and plants:** birth of, I 72 (Easter), 35 (Marquesas), 61, 62 (Society); blighted by smell of corpse of Ti'i, (Samoa) I 146, cf. 354; coconut, *see that title*; as combatants in cosmic myths, (Samoa) I 4, 5, 6, 83–5; fire conserved in trees, etc., *see under* Fire legends, hero of; flowering of, fixing beginning of year, (Marquesas) I 174, 175; forest god, Tane-mahuta, (New Zealand) I 24; having souls, (Society) I 206; leaves of tree in heaven changing into roast pig, etc., (Fotuna) II 95; men created from *ti* plant, (Niue) I 69; men derived from creepers, etc., I 4–5, 6, 7, 48, 53, 54, cf. 8 (Samoa), 55–7, 58 (Tonga), *see also* Rarotonga, I 66; in moon, (Society) I 99, 100, 114; names of months connected with, I 173 (Hervey), 154, 155, 156, 157 (Samoa); plants associated with the ancestors, (Tikopia) II 111; priest invoking sky-god from tree, (Fiji) I 164; propping up the sky, I 45; I 42 (Mangaia), 44 (Niue), 43 (Rarotonga), 41–2 (Samoa), 42, 91 (Society); restored to life by Hina, (Society) I 65, II 149; sky reached from, *see under* Sky; souls climbing trees carried off to hades, II 118, 123 (Fate), 16, 275–6 cf. 7, 10, 12 (Mangaia), *see also* Rarotonga, II 25–6, 150, 169–70, 278, 279; souls restored to life by means of trees, *see under* Resurrection, etc.; speaking tree in *Bulotu*, I 344; speaking tree at entrance of land of gods, (Samoa) I 331; tree forming entrance to *Havaiki* below, (Rakahanga) II 200, 205, cf. Rarotonga, II 194, 205; tree near starting-place for other world, I 330–1, 352 (Samoa), 343, 352–3 (Tonga); wood and mountain spirits, (Rotuma) I 70, *see also* Le-Unu, Samoa, I 156
- Tu (Ku):** Polynesian god representing stability, I 23, cf. 47
- , **Ku (Hawai'i):** existing from beginning, I 23, 74; living in sky, I 23; one of the creator-gods, I 23; representing stability, I 22–3, 75
- Tu-metua (Mangaia):** daughter of the great mother in *Avaiiki*, I 113; day named after, I 191; the last made of the major gods, I 191
- Tu, Tetoo (Marquesas):** creating sky and earth, I 67; prominent in legends, II 176
- Tu-mata-uenga (New Zealand):** the progenitor of man, I 24; representing stability, I 25, cf. 24; son of sky and earth, I 24
- Tu (Paumotu):** son of sky and earth, I 28, 80
- Tu (Rarotonga):** at naming of Maui-tikitiki, II 168; and other gods, challenging Maui, II 170; son of Papa and Te Tumua, I 14
- Tu, Itu (Samoa):** helping to restrain the sun, I 110
- Tu (Society):** association with the Pomare family, I 188; day of month named after? I 187, 188; and Tangaroa, cursing man, I 65, II 149, 167
- Tuahalakaho,** entrance to path to *Lolo-fonua*, I 353, cf. II 190
- Tuanui-about-to-fly,** devouring moon, (Mangaia) I 116
- Tuaraatai,** god of seas, (Society) I 59
- Tua-te-ahu-tapu,** porter of hades, (Marquesas) II 46
- Tuavaava,** god, (Marquesas) II 38, 64
- Tube,** “black” son of Tangaroa, (Tonga) I 57
- Tube Nuha,** death of, (Tonga) I 248, 249
- tui'aana,** genealogy, (Samoa) I 7, 8, 83
- tuiatua,** descended from gods, (Samoa) I 6, 9, cf. 83
- tui'fiti** (Samoa): the father of Sina, I 109, 200, II 147, 148; and Tapuitema, I 128, 129

## INDEX

395

- tuimanua* (Samoa): Maui fishing up land with hook from, (Samoa) I 33, II 231, (Tonga) I 33-4, II 232; and Savai'i funeral ceremony, I 240-1; and the Tangaroa-gods, I 98, II 231
- Tui-te'e-langi, propping up the sky, (Samoa) I 41 cf. 50, 51, 52, 86-7, II 227
- Tui-Tokelau, god, (Tokelau) I 117
- tuitonga* (Tonga): appearing in dream, I 218; ceremonies on death of, I 249; mats etc. buried in grave of, I 247; and origin of man from creeper, I 57; widow strangled, I 248
- Tuivivi, Tuivivi, god, (Marquesas) II 38, 41, 64
- Tukaitaua, god of paradise, (Aitutaki) II 34
- Tukihiti, taking souls to hades, (Paumotu) II 81, cf. 107
- Tukituki, entrance to spirit-world, (New Hebrides, Fate) II 118, 256
- Tu-ku-i-u, chief, (Easter) II 109
- Tuli* or snipe (Samoa): associated with Sina, I 48, 49, 97 and *n.* 1, 109; child of Tangaroa, I 48, 49, 109; child of Tangaroa by a stone, I 7-8; connected with origin of world and man, I 7-8, 48-9, cf. Tonga, I 55, 57, 97, and *see also* Fiji, I 119; created by Tangaroa, I 52; emblem of Tangaroa-the-messenger, I 54; a plover, or a snipe, I 48
- Tumuteanaoa (echo), (Mangaia) I 13, 29-30
- Tuna, coconut growing from head of, (Paumotu) II 178
- Tupa, god, (Marquesas) II 175
- Tupai Island (Society): almost all souls going to, I 398-9; feared, uninhabited, I 361, 398; souls escaping from, and frightening people, I 398; souls not going to paradise passing on to, I 361 cf. 381-2, II 273, 274; succubus and *tiare* bushes in, I 374
- tupapau*, *tiapapau*: a corpse, or the ghost of the dead, (Society) I 203, 396 *n.* 2; greatly feared, (Paumotu) II 84, (Rapa) II 108, (Society) I 396, 397, 398; shed for body being embalmed, (Society) I 251
- Tupaya, Tupia, and orientation by stars, (Society) I 137
- Tupoho-uta, and Tupoho-tai, (Marquesas) II 37-8
- tupua*: ghost, corpse, etc., (Paumotu) I 210; term for image, (Niue) I 213
- Turanga, god, (Mangaia) II 9
- Turtles: born of a stone, (Tonga) I 10; names connected with stars, (Paumotu) I 135; sacred, due to chief, (Aitutaki) I 267-8
- Tutahoroa*, road to *Po*, (Society) I 363
- Tu-tarangi, (Rarotonga) I 111
- Tutuila (Samoa): man derived from worms etc. in, (Manu'a) I 53, 54, 88; and Upolu, created last, (Manu'a) I 53, 54, 88
- Ulufanuase'ese'e (Samoa), I 336
- Umatmas*, spirit-world, (Aneiteum) II 117
- Unmarried men, *see* Bachelors
- Upolu (Samoa): fished up by Tangaroa, I 33; man derived from worms in, (Manu'a) I 53, 54, 88; remaining partly pre-Tangaroan, I 304; and Tutuila, created last, (Manu'a) I 53, 54, 88
- Uputonofiti (Marquesas), II 48
- Ursa Major: known, I 137 (New Hebrides), 130 (Samoa), 126 (Society); and the pillars of sky, (Society) I 121
- Urutaetae, Ouroutatae, guiding souls to paradise, (Society) I 365, 369, cf. 394
- Uvea: drawn up by Tangaroa in fishing-net, (Uvea) I 38; fished up by Maui-alonga, (Fotuna) I 37
- Vaca-acow-uli, "white" son of Tangaroa, (Tonga) I 57
- Va-e-langi, god, (Ongtong Java) II 113, 114
- Va-e-langi*, a heaven for *makua* class, (Ongtong Java) I 113-14, 115
- Vaerua, god of hades, (Bukabuka) II 105, 106, 107, 142
- Vaerua-kino, swallowing souls, (Austral) II 108
- Vai ali* or Water of death, in *Sa-le-Fe'e* or hades, (Samoa) I 334-5, 339
- Vaiola*, or Water of life: in paradise, restoring youth, etc., (Fotuna) II 95, 99, cf. Rarotonga, the *Vaiari*, II 28, 150, 169, 253; in *Pulotu*, restoring youth, resuscitating dead, (Samoa) I 333-4, 334-5, 339, II 148, cf. Tonga, I 344; of 'Tilafainga, of volcanic origin? (Samoa) I 334, II 249; woman controlling water of death and, (Samoa) I 334-5, 339, II 148; *see also* soul bathing in lake etc. *under* Lake
- Vaiorongono, stream, (Mangaia) II 4, 5
- Varenga, (Mangaia) II 7, 15, 17 *n.* 1, 18, 21

- Vari-ma-te-takere (Mangaia): day named after, I 191; great mother in *Avaiki*, I 12-13, II 8
- Vatea, *see* Atea
- Vavau: home of ghosts in *Avaiki*, (Mangaia) I 307, II 6; name applied to stopping-places regarded as ancestral homes, I 270; spirit-world and ancestral home? (Aitutaki) I 268, 270
- Vavau (Tonga), fished up by Maui-kisikisi, I 34
- Veetini (Mangaia): coming back to earth and departing in track of sun, II 5; dirge for, II 4-5; the first man dying natural death, II 4, 151, 224; following sun across sea, II 5, 15; instituting food offerings for dead, I 267, II 5; recognizable but impalpable, II 5, 21; Tiki the sister of, II 4, 6, 22, 171, 172, 224, 251-2; visiting both caves, II 5, 14 n. 1
- Vehiatua, taboos on death of, (Tahiti) I 258, 261, 263
- Vehine hae*, *veine hae*, etc. (Marquesas): appearing in human form, II 44, 50; appearing as mist, II 44; assuming animal forms, II 50; bringing food to *Upper Havaiki*, II 48; and the *fanaua*, II 49-50; feared, I 207, II 44, 45, 47, 68; not feared, II 44, 65; presence of, made known by noises, II 50; representing the dead, II 44; not resting till feast made? II 44-5; returning spirits, I 207, II 45, 65, *see also* II 49-50; not seen, but felt, etc., II 45; souls for whom sacrifices not offered, II 47, 68
- Venus: associated with Atea, (Marquesas) I 134, II 242; associated with Tane, (Mangaia) I 132; confused with Jupiter, I 132 (Hervey), 122-3 (Society); conjunction of Jupiter and, (Samoa) I 128; guiding Hiro's ship, (Society) I 138; not known as planet, (Society) I 119, 122; and the morning and evening stars, I 135, 136 (Fotuna), 132 (Mangaia), 134 (Marquesas), 135 (Niue), 128-9 (Samoa), 122-3 (Society); regulating season for fish, (Paumotu) I 135; relationship to other stars, (Society) I 121, 123; the star of the dead, (Society) I 397, cf. Paumotu, II 86; and term *Taurua*, etc., (Society) I 122, 123
- Vera (Mangaia), I 307, II 5-6, 15, 18, 21, 35
- Veeao*, a happy land reached by sea, (Marquesas) II 41, 54, 63
- Viachi, chief, (Tonga) I 247
- Volcano-cult: association of the dead with the Maui-gods or volcanoes, II 246-56; 255 (Fotuna), 251-3 (Hervey), 253 (Marquesas), 256 (New Hebrides), 254-5 (Niue), 254 (Paumotu), 249 (Samoa), 250-1 (Society), 249-50 (Tonga); and caverns or rocks below associated with hell, (Fotuna) II 95, cf. 97, (Marquesas) II 38, 53, (Samoa) I 328, 329 and n. 2, (Society) I 362, 380, 383, II 250-1, 272-3, cf. I 375, 381; and the closing of direct roads to under-world, II 258; (Mangaia) II 22-3, 171-3, 209, 251-2, (Samoa) I 325-6, 329, II 23, 156, 187-8, 252, cf. 186, (Rarotonga) II 23, 169, 173, 208-9, 253, 278; craters as entrances to world below, I 319, II 247; (Aneiteum) II 117-18, 256, 295, (Society) I 362-3, 374 cf. 375, 380-1, 383, II 250-1, 272-3, *see also* II 192, rock entrance to fire-region; cult of the aborigines of Polynesia, I 302, II 257, 258, 259, 329, 336, cf. II 217, 245; cult of the dual people in Melanesia, II 299, 300-1, 302, 313; cult originally relating solely to the Maui-gods, II 217, 244-5, cf. I 302; cult surviving in modified form, II 218, 259, 332-4, 340; destinations in subterranean fire-region connected with, II 217, 257-8, 259, 336-8; dominated by later cults, II 258, 332-4; hypothesis and propositions as to, II 217-18; idea of ancestral home not originally part of, I 302-3, cf. I 315-16, II 258; and lake on mountain as entrance to region below, *see under* Lake; and lakes of fire etc. in hades in *Po*, (Paumotu) II 73-4, 77, 254, 287, 288; Maui-gods partially replaced by later gods in connection with, II 225-46; 228-9, 223-5, 230, 240-1 (Hervey), 229, 235-6, 241, 242 (Marquesas), 229, 236-7, 238, 241-3 (Paumotu), 229, 237 (Rotuma), 227, 230-1, 237-8, 240 (Samoa), 228, 232-3, 238, 240-1 (Society), 229-30, 237, 240 (Tokelau), 227-8, 231-2, 238, 240 (Tonga), 229, 237, 240 (Uvea); Niue "heaven" associated with earthquake, etc., II 88, 91-2, 255, 290-1; and rocks or caves as entrances to hades, *see under* the *Fafa* (Samoa), and *under* Souls, journeys of; *Sa-le-Fé'e* as a volcanic region below, I 338, 350, 354, cf. II 249, 268-9; subterranean destinations associated with common people in Polynesia, II 302, 303-4, 317, 323-6, 327-8, 334-6; subterranean regions as hells, etc., II 127, 258; and whirlpools as direct entrances to under-world, II 248
- Volcanoes: Lofia associated with, (Tonga) II 212-14, 228, 238; Mafui associated with, (Samoa) II 185, 186, 209, 210, 211; Mafuisse-foulou causing, (Fotuna) II 215-16; Mahuiké, Mauike goddess of, (Marquesas) II 196, 210; Matshiktshiki

## INDEX

397

- Volcanoes (*cont.*)**  
 living in, (New Hebrides, Aniwa) II 216; Ma-tiktiki shattering rocks to free captives, (New Hebrides) II 183, 209; Maui causing earthquakes and, II 155, 208, 245; Maui-tikitiki connected with, (Rarotonga) II 208–9 *cf.* I 43, II 168; Pere (Pele) associated with, (Hawai'i, Paumotu, *cf.* Rarotonga) II 214–15, 237, 238; Tangaroa and Hina parents of rumblings of, (Society) II 214; volcanic hole connected with stick of Rahu, (Rotuma) I 70
- War:** cry of warrior ghost, an omen of, (Society) I 359; divination from eclipse respecting, (Society) I 115; earthquake at noon an omen of, (Samoa) II 187; eclipse or comet an omen of, (Samoa) I 113; “fighting” in the evolution myths, (Samoa) I 4, 5, 6, 7; gods of, (Society) I 59; household gods giving strength in fighting, (Samoa) I 154; Rongo god of, (Mangaia) II 20, 22, 234; spirit-ship bringing, (Samoa) I 333, *cf.* Society, I 255, 256, 269; a subject for the consideration of the gods, (Samoa) I 330; taboo at time of *palolo*-fishing, (Fiji) I 164
- Warriors,** going to paradise, II 128–9; (Fotuna) II 95, 98 *cf.* 96–7, 292, (Mangaia) II 2, 19, 20, 21, 57, 141–2, 275, 276, (Marquesas) I 274, II 40, 43, 56, 57, 129, 282, (Niue) II 87, 138, (Paumotu) II 73, 76, 77, 132, 287, 288, (Rarotonga) II 26, 27, 29, 31, 57, 167, 278, (Samoa) I 336, *cf.* Reef, II 111–12, and Tonga, I 299, 346; *see also* II 129–30, persons dying violent deaths going to heaven
- Water:** cuttle-fish and god Fe'e associated with, (Samoa) II 158–9; and fire, origin of things attributed to, (Samoa) I 4, 8, 85, II 158, 159; fresh, child of Tane and Tangaroa, (Tahiti) I 63; fresh, origin of, (Samoa) I 4, 7, 50; fresh, produced by rock at Tangaroa's command, (Manu'a) I 51, 86–7; grave of restless soul deepened till water came, (Tongareva) II 107–8; of life or death, *see Vaiola and Vai ali*; rivers and fountains, origin, (Society) I 62; Ru connected with, (Paumotu) II 198, 214; Tangaroa laying the world-egg on, (Hawai'i) I 19
- Waterspout:** child of Tane and Tangaroa, (Tahiti) I 63; helping Lu to raise skies, (Tokelau) I 44; used by god to make the Paumotu Islands, I 36
- Whales:** once human, (Marquesas) II 41; spirits returning in forms of, (Tonga) I 356
- Whirlpools:** carrying souls down to *Ava-iki*, (Mangaia) II 11, 15, 251, 275–6, *cf.* Marquesas, II 253; as direct entrances to nether-world, II 248; with houses of Mотор, (Mangaia) II 10–11, 12, 13; whirlpool at Manu'a an entrance to nether-world, (Samoa) I 324, 329, II 249
- Whistling:** announcing approach of evil spirit, (Paumotu) II 85, *cf.* Marquesas, II 50; dead indicating presence by means of, (Tonga) I 217, 356; taboo, (Tonga) I 218; *see also* Tahiti, I 395–6, the *ti'i* addressed by hissing
- Widows:** breaking lobes of ears, etc., (Tikopia) I 283; cord for strangling, given to man at wedding? (Society) I 252, *cf.* Aneiteum, I 285–6, wife wearing strangling-cord from time of marriage; daughters and, buried with king, (Tonga) I 248, *cf.* 240 *n.* 1; inducing husbands' spirits to attack oppressors, (Niue) II 92–3; lying beside corpse, I 272 (Marquesas), 252 (Society), 281 (Tongareva); of *makua* wandering till saw dolphins, (Ongtong Java) II 114; sacrificed, I 272 (Marquesas), 240? (Samoa); strangled, I 285–6 (Aneiteum), 248 (Tonga)
- Winds:** Atea creating? (Paumotu) I 151, II 242; Atea the father of, (Marquesas) I 68, II 242; blowing from valleys in sky, (Marquesas) I 93, 150; blowing men from tree to sky, (Samoa) I 94; blowing through holes at horizon, (Mangaia) I 13, 147; born of gods, (Easter) I 72; children of clouds, (Samoa) I 3, 85, 145; children of Ilu and Mamao, (Samoa) I 4; confined in cave at N.W., (Niue) I 151; confined in caves where sun rose and set, (Society) I 142; “digging up” of, in February, (Samoa) I 154; family god of Pomare presiding over, (Society) I 142; goddess of, (Tonga) I 146; god of, represented by rock, (Society) I 142; gods of, I 151 (Niue), 150 (Rarotonga), 151 (Tokelau); Lu naming, (Tokelau) I 152; Lu raising sky with aid of, (Tokelau) I 44; Maui fetching, (Rarotonga) I 149–50; Maui's “fish” pointing to wind-holes, (Rarotonga) I 147–8, II 169; Maui and Rou associated with, (Society) I 141, II 164, 208, 233; method of obtaining favourable wind, I 147 (Hervey), 153 (New Hebrides); names of, I 152 (Easter), 151 (Fotuna), 148–50 (Hervey), 150 (Marquesas), 153 (New Hebrides), 151 (Paumotu), 146 (Samoa), 142–5 (Society), 152 (Tikopia), 152 (Tokelau); Orre-orre the god of, (Society) I 59, 141–2, 189; points of compass and, I 148–9 (Hervey), 150 (Marquesas), 142 (Society), 152 (Tiko-

Winds (*cont.*)

pia); Raka the god and father of, I 13, 147 (Mangaia), 151 (Paumotu); Roua-nuku god of, I 150, 151 (Paumotu), 150 (Rarotonga); skies producing, (Society) I 62; from S.E. associated with stars, (Paumotu) I 135; from S.W. associated with lizard, (Society) I 144; spirit in star sending bad weather and, (Ong-tong Java) I 153; Tane prayed to for, (Tahiti) I 142; Tane and Tangaroa the parents of, (Tahiti) I 63, 141; Ta-whiri-ma-tea the father of, (New Zealand) I 24–5; Ti'iti'i and, (Samoa) I 145–6, 330, II 156; and weather, forecasts of, (Society) I 142; west wind connected with Toiva, (Samoa) I 129, 145

Worms: deriving from the sea, (Marquesas) I 68; food of souls in *Avaiki*, (Mangaia) II 19; Ilu one of the original ancestors, (Samoa) I 4; man derived from maggots or, I 4–5, 7, 48, cf. 6, 8 (Samoa), 55–7 (Tonga); slaves derived from maggots, (Tonga) I 58; Tutuila and Upolu people derived from maggots, (Manu'a) I 53, 54, 88; worm-like point the primary being in Mangaia, I 12, cf. 81–2, *see also* Marquesas, I 67–8

Yams: man derived from, (New Hebrides) I 73; months named in connection with,

(Samoa) I 154, cf. 156; seasons and yam-plantings, (Fotuna) I 178

Year: beginning in April, (Fotuna) I 177; beginning in August, (Easter) I 180; beginning in December, (Hervey) I 172; beginning of, fixed by arrival of *palolo*, (Samoa) I 157–8, 165, 170; beginning of, fixed by rainy season, (Marquesas) I 174, 175; beginning of, indicated by star, (Society) I 172; beginning in March, I 179 (Rotuma), 169 *n.* 1, 170 (Society); beginning in October, I 175? (Marquesas), 172 (Society); composed of six months, (Rotuma) I 179; as daughter and wife of Tangaroa, (Tahiti) I 61; as mother of months, stars, etc., (Tahiti) I 61; named after Pleiades, (Marquesas) I 174, 175; same term for star and, (Fotuna) I 135, cf. 178; solar year, idea of, I 176–7 (Paumotu), 170, 171–2, cf. 169, 183 (Society), *see also* Dying god; three breadfruit crops forming one year, (Fotuna) I 178, cf. Society, I 171; two seasons in, I 178 (Fotuna), 172–3 (Hervey), 177 (Niue), 164–5 (Samoa), 166 (Tonga); the two seasons of, named after the Pleiades, I 173 (Hervey), 126, 170 (Society)

Younger brother superior to elder brother, (Tonga) I 57; *see also* Maui-tikitiki